THE LIFE OF Mr. *CLEVELAND* NATURAL SON OF *Oliver Cromwell.*

Written by himſelf.

Giving a particular Account of his Unhappineſs in Love, Marriage, Friendſhip, *&c.* and his great Sufferings in *Europe* and *America*,

Intermix'd with Reflections, deſcribing the Heart of Man in all its Variety of Paſſions and Diſguiſes.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
Printed for N. PREVOST in the *Strand.*
MDCCXXXII.

BRITISH MUSEUM
30
69
SEP

THE LIFE OF Mr. *CLEVELAND*, NATURAL SON OF *Oliver Cromwell.*

BOOK III.

I AM now entering upon the relation of my numberleſs misfortunes; a relation that will draw tears from my eyes, as well as thoſe of my readers. This reflection will adminiſter ſome conſolation to me as I

write, ſince I ſhall excite the pity of the tender-hearted, whom I ſhall leave to judge of my diſtreſs. But I muſt intreat them not to judge ſo much of my grief from the appearances of it, as from what they themſelves have felt; that is to ſay, that in caſe they find I poſſeſs a greater outward reſolution and ſtrength of mind in my affliction than they themſelves could be capable of, I don't deſire them to form an idea of me from thoſe deceitful appearances. And indeed, the courage and unalterable conſtancy I diſcover'd throughout the whole ſeries of my misfortunes, gave occaſion to my being called the philoſopher. 'Twas ſuppoſed, that my evenneſs of temper, and the apparent ſerenity of my mind, under the moſt cruel reverſes of fortune, muſt be the effects of a more than ordinary virtue. Theſe were honour'd with the name of philoſophy; a pompous name, that has coſt me dear; and certainly thoſe who gave it me were unacquainted with the receſſes of my heart. It muſt be confeſs'd, that I drew from philoſophy all the ſuccour it was capable of adminiſtring; it threw a light over all my undertakings, regulated my exterior behaviour, ſupported my prudence, furniſhed me with conſolation againſt deſpair; but then,

hen, it cou'd never leſſen my inward an-
uiſh, nor hinder me from proving, that
philoſopher is always a man internally.
will now diſplay the unhappy ſeries of
dventures, whether tender or tragical; but
ll of them ſo ſad and affecting, that I
m perſuaded they muſt excite the com-
paſſion of my readers.

THE king having conſented to my mar-
riage, and my lord diſcovering as much
eagerneſs as I did to have it compleated,
one would have thought that nothing
could happen in four and twenty hours
to traverſe what was expected with ſo
much pleaſure. I ſpent part of the after-
noon in diſcourſing with Miſs *Fanny*, and
the reſt in reflecting on the unexpected
good fortune which raiſed me in an in-
ſtant to the higheſt felicity. However,
at the ſame time that I thus gave my ſelf
up to the moſt delightful reflections, I yet
kept ſuch a guard upon my temper as
ſometimes to intermix ſome ſerious
thoughts with them, to which a long ha-
bit of meditating had accuſtomed me.
Now, ſaid I to my ſelf, all my deſires,
and the ſeveral plans I had laid down, are
finiſhed.

I WISHED that love might make me
happy; the inſtant is now approaching

in which I am to be ſo, and my heart is ſo agreeably fill'd, that I plainly perceive I had not propoſed a falſe happineſs to my ſelf. But I had another object in view, and what was it? To labour inceſſantly to attain wiſdom by ſtudy and reflection: I have not deviated from thoſe paths on this occaſion, and am reſolved never to do it. But now my condition will be changed, and therefore I muſt govern my ſelf by other maxims. Tho' wiſdom be always the ſame, it yet aſſumes a different ſhape in the various ſtations of life. I have already had an opportunity of making remarks ſufficient on that variety of conditions and duties, to form ſuch a plan as may ſuit the ſtation of life into which I am now going to enter. Let me endeavour to make love and wiſdom go hand in hand, ſo far as this is poſſible; and thereupon I actually made, I don't ſay a ſeries of occupations, for I cou'd not ſo far foreſee what was to happen as to be certain that I ſhould be at liberty to follow them; but a ſyſtem of new principles, which I thought ſuited in general to the ſtate into which I was then going to enter, and whereto I needed only apply as the different circumſtances might require. I was in this ſerious turn of thoughts,

houghts, when word was brought that ny lord deſired earneſtly to ſpeak with me.

'TWAS *James* who brought me word of it, who appear'd with ſuch an air of melancholy, as made me ſuppoſe he brought me ill news. He did not wait for my enquiring his meſſage, but told me at once, that in caſe my marriage was not entirely broke off, it was at leaſt ſuſpended till we ſhould be got to *Roan*, at the requeſt of Mr. *Cleveland*, who had thrown himſelf at the king's feet, in order to beg it might be deferr'd; and humbly requeſted it as the greateſt favour that cou'd be done him. This is all, ſays *James* to me, I've heard, but my lord will acquaint you further. Hearing this, I went immediately to his lordſhip, who ſeemed vex'd and in a muſing poſture. Your grandfather, ſays he, as I came in, is a brute, and nothing but his advanced age, and the reſpect I have for his majeſty, could have kept me from treating him as he deſerves. At the ſame time he inform'd me, that Mr. *Cleveland* had reproached him with an air of contempt, for pretending to give his daughter to me in marriage, without acquainting him with it, and to carry me with

him to *America*; that he had told him in a very rude manner, that 'twould be in vain for him to flatter himſelf with the hopes of doing it, ſince he had obtain'd orders from his majeſty to the contrary; that he himſelf was come to acquaint me with them in the king's name, and to forbid him to think of marrying his daughter before he arrived at *Roan*, thro' which his majeſty intended to paſs in his way to *Flanders*, and whither we were ordered to follow him. Exaſperated, ſays my lord, at his rude way of addreſſing me, I cou'd not forbear ſhewing ſome reſentment upon that account, and gave him to underſtand, that your marrying into my family was far from being a diſhonour. Upon this, he had the impudence to reproach me with my wife's unhappy adventure, with which I unthinkingly acquainted his majeſty, who, as I ſuppoſe, let him into that ſecret. I muſt confeſs to you, continued the viſcount, that had he not immediately left the room, after having inſulted me in this manner, nothing in the world cou'd have check'd the violence of my ſudden rage. However, I went no farther, after his leaving me, than barely to complain to the king of it, who order'd him to come and beg my pardon; which

which he did: But then he repeated the order he gave of ſuſpending your marriage, upon pretence that it might be done more conveniently at *Roan*; and that I ſhou'd afterwards meet with a ſhip in *Havre de Grace* which wou'd carry me nearer to our colonies in *America*, than that which is ready to ſet ſail from *Bayonne*. My lord *Axminſter* was afterwards ſo ingenuous as to own, that he had made a falſe ſtep in propoſing my marriage to the king without acquainting Mr. *Cleveland* with it firſt; and as he aſcribed his oppoſition wholly to the anger with which he was enflamed to ſee himſelf deſpiſed, he aſſured me, with his uſual tenderneſs, that for my ſake he wou'd lay aſide his reſentments. He even adviſed me to reconcile my ſelf to my grandfather by my ſubmiſſive behaviour, well knowing that his favour wou'd be of the higheſt advantage to me.

UPON this advice I immediately waited upon him, when he reprimanded me very ſeverely for uſing him ſo diſreſpectfully; and having ſet before me the duty and affection which I owed him as being his grandſon, he afterwards declared to me, with a ſevere tone of voice, the authority which he, as my grand-

father, had over both my perſon and conduct. I did not offer to argue with him in the leaſt, but only took notice of the honour and advantage which wou'd accrue to me by marrying into my lord *Axminſter*'s family. We were very amicable till our departure; nor did he once give me the leaſt hint of the cruel deſign he was then meditating.

As I had no reaſon to ſuſpect any thing of that nature, I conſol'd my ſelf at my *Fanny*'s feet, for the delay which prevented my enjoying the utmoſt of my wiſhes. My lord himſelf was ſo far from ſuſpecting Mr. *Cleveland*'s deſign, that he made no ſcruple of being reconciled, and treating him as a friend. We left *Bayonne*, and arrived at *Roan*, a moment after the king, who receiv'd the greateſt honours in that city, and had a noble palace appointed for him to lodge in. My lord took up his quarters again at the ſame inn with us, which was a very great mortification to Mr. *Cleveland*, who ſuppoſed I ſhould devote my ſelf to him, and had even provided me an apartment in the king's palace. A report being immediately ſpread of our return with the prince, we were viſited by my lord *Omerſon* and other friends, who thought they ſhould

pleaſe

pleaſe me in congratulating me upon my being ſtill ſo much in Mrs. *Lallin*'s favour. My lord *Omerſon* was very urgent with me to viſit that lady immediately; but how did I ſurprize him, when I acquainted him with the engagements that were between Miſs *Fanny* and my ſelf, and the hopes I had of marrying her very quickly! There was no room to think that Mrs. *Lallin*, who undoubtedly had heard of my amour, would have ſtill loved me, had they left her at liberty to reflect that my ingratitude to her made me unworthy of it; but her ill fate and mine made her liſten too heedleſsly to the deſtructive advice which was her ruin, and had like to have proved mine.

MR. *Cleveland*'s real deſign in getting the king to put off our marriage, was purely that he might have an opportunity of breaking it off entirely; not but that he look'd upon my lord *Axminſter*'s daughter as a very advantageous match for me, and conſequently it muſt ſooth his ambition; but he loved me ſo tenderly that he cou'd not bear the thoughts of my going into *America*. He conſider'd me as the only ſurviving perſon of his family; and he was in ſo advanced an age, that he cou'd not hope to live till I re-

turn'd from that part of the world. He was abſolutely determin'd to get me into the houſhold, in order that I might be always near him; but he never communicated his deſign to me till the day after our arrival at *Roan*. I ſpoke in ſuch terms as plainly ſhew'd I had the deepeſt ſenſe of his affection, but afterwards expreſs'd with ſo much warmth my engagements with my lord and Miſs *Fanny*, as plainly ſhewed I ſhould never give my conſent to be diſengaged from them. He was inform'd a little after of the paſſion Mrs. *Lallin* had for me, which was enough to make him attempt a new artifice, that ſucceeded but too well. He got himſelf introduced to her, and ſaying he was my grandfather, he thanked her for beſtowing her affection on me. She did not diſguiſe her thoughts at this overture, and even expreſt ſome uneaſineſs to think I ſhould ſlight her. Upon hearing which, my grandfather offer'd to uſe his endeavours to make me conſider her charms in a due light, and the value of her affection. He gave her to underſtand, that provided ſhe would but lend him a little aſſiſtance, he had thought of a ſcheme which would infallibly diſengage me from her rival; for ſhe had before heard

heard that there was ſuch a one, and that his was the cauſe of my coldneſs to her. He wrought ſo far on her mind, that after having perſuaded her that her reputation wou'd not ſuffer by it, and that he would let no one but the king of *England* into the ſecret, that he engaged her to feign I had promiſed her marriage, and beſeech the king to employ his authority in order to force me to complete it. No one was let into the plot but my lord *Omerſon* and a few *Engliſh* gentlemen, who willingly join'd in it, as well from the remembrance of the many obligations they owed her, as that they were overjoyed to ſee her favour our nation ſo much. Mr. *Cleveland* was likewiſe ſo cunning as to get me to write my name upon a piece of paper that very day, upon ſome trifling pretence which I was not aware of, over which he drew a promiſe in due form; and this being done, he put the authentic inſtrument into Mrs. *Lallin*'s hands.

IN the mean time, I was urgent with my lord *Axminſter* to have our marriage concluded; but he juſtly anſwer'd, that as the king had forbid it, he did not dare to proceed ſo far without firſt obtaining his leave. This indeed was properly my buſineſs, and therefore I waited upon his

majeſty, who the moment he ſaw me gueſs'd what I was come about, and without making the leaſt objection, told me that he gave me his conſent, provided my lord *Axminſter* and Mr. *Cleveland* approved it. I was afraid that the latter wou'd not; which his majeſty perceiving, told me he would ſend for him immediately, in order to know his reſolution on that head. Mr. *Cleveland* appear'd, and was ſo far from refuſing his conſent, that he congratulated me on the lovelineſs of Miſs *Fanny*'s perſon, at the ſame time calling her my bride. Hearing this, I left the apartments in an extaſy of joy, and went and acquainted the viſcount's family with the occaſion of it. Some time after, an order was brought me to return to the palace. At my coming in, his majeſty, who now wore a different aſpect, held a paper in his hand. He bid me advance forward, and ſhewing me my name written at the bottom of it, he aſked me, with an air of ſeverity, whether 'twas my hand. It was impoſſible for me not to know it; upon which I anſwer'd that it really was, but that I could not comprehend how it came into his majeſty's hands. I ſuppoſe, ſays the king, that it ſurprizes you; however, your owning it

is

s ſomething. He afterwards aſked me ſeveral queſtions concerning my intimacy with Mrs. *Lallin*, and the reaſons which had induced me to abandon her, after having promiſed her marriage in ſo ſolemn a manner. I cou'd not anſwer clearly to theſe queſtions, which were ſo dark with regard to me; and my ſurprize reſembled undoubtedly the confuſion of a guilty perſon. The king was highly offended at my ſilence, which he conſidered as obſtinacy; upon which he ſpoke to me in the moſt harſh terms, and order'd me to be arreſted in his own palace. Mr. *Cleveland* came immediately and viſited me in the chamber in which I was confin'd, when aſſuming an air of affliction, he aſked me with an affected compaſſion, what I had done to diſpleaſe his majeſty. I told him all I could gather from a converſation the ſubject whereof I was utterly ignorant of; and 'twas here the cunning old gentleman employed all his rhetorick to bring matters about inſenſibly. After having pretended to reflect upon what I told him, he ſaid that he conjectured what the affair was; that he had heard, ſince his arrival at *Roan*, of an inſtrument, by which 'twas ſaid I had engaged my ſelf to marry Mrs. *Lallin*; that

that ſome enemy of mine muſt have told the king of it; that I muſt know the truth of it all; but as for himſelf, he had not thought proper to inform me, till then, of what was publickly reported on that head; becauſe as I was juſt upon the point of marrying Miſs *Fanny*, he fancied I had little or nothing to fear from Mrs. *Lallin*'s reſentments; but that the face of things were now quite changed, ſince that lady had undoubtedly complained to the king of it; that as he was an upright prince, and jealous of his reputation in a foreign nation, he would never ſuffer a woman of Mrs. *Lallin*'s merit and quality to be betray'd and inſulted with impunity by an *Engliſhman*; that tho' he were not prompted to this from a love of juſtice and glory, he yet would be obliged to exert himſelf upon this occaſion, purely for the ſake of a great number of his moſt diſtinguiſh'd ſubjects who had fled to *Roan* for refuge, and ſtood in need of the protection of the inhabitants of that city. In a word, continued Mr. *Cleveland*, the more I conſider this affair the uglier it appears, with regard to you. But now I think of it, ſays he, interrupting himſelf, a ſhort expedident may be made uſe of on this occaſion;

ion; an expedient that will be no ways dangerous with reſpect to you; and that is, to fulfil the promiſe you made Mrs. *Lallin*. By this means you'll come off with honour, will put a ſtop to her complaints, and make his majeſty eaſy. Beſides, ſhe's ſo beautiful and wealthy a lady, that no gentleman need ſcruple to make her his wife. Let me, ſays he, embracing me, prevail with you to marry her. 'Twill be a much greater ſatisfaction to me to ſee you married in *Roan*, than for you to croſs the ſeas, and ramble in an unknown country, whence we are not ſure of ever returning again, but are certain of meeting with a thouſand diſaſters.

I LISTNED to Mr. *Cleveland* with the greateſt attention, and he very poſſibly flattered himſelf that his arguments had made ſome impreſſion on me; but my only view in this affair was to dive to the bottom of the black deſign that was going forward. The letter which the Lord *Axminſter* had received in *Bayonne* gave me a great light into this myſterious affair; and I eaſily diſcovered, that Mrs. *Lallin* had involved me in it purely from an exceſs of love, and in order to fix me wholly to her ſelf. But a promiſe of mar-

marriage, ſign'd with my own hand, was what I cou'd not poſſibly comprehend. I had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of Mr. *Cleveland*; and he endeavour'd to prevent my entertaining any thing of that nature, by aſking me a thouſand queſtions with an air of the greateſt ſincerity; for the moment I had proteſted by oath, that the inſtrument which his majeſty had was forged, and was never made by me; he aſked me whether ſome letter which I had writ, and ſubſcrib'd with my name, might not have been torn off with an ill deſign. I was certain I had never writ a letter in my whole life; and my warmth when I made this aſſeveration ſeemed to ſurprize him very much. Then, ſays he, ſomebody muſt certainly have counterfeited your hand: The *French* ladies are vaſtly cunning in their gallantry; but in a word, as no man would be more earneſt than I, to diſſuade you from marrying Mrs. *Lallin*, in caſe it wou'd turn to your diſadvantage; my opinion is, that conſidering your preſent circumſtances, prudence will dictate to you to accept of her offers. I was ſo little affected with theſe reaſons, that I did not once attempt to anſwer them, and only deſir'd he wou'd give my lord *Axminſter* notice of

his unlucky affair. My diſcovering ſo much confidence for the viſcount, and ſo little for him, exaſperated him very much. He anſwer'd, that I judg'd like a heedleſs young fellow, and that I was greatly miſtaken, if I fancied that this nobleman could preſerve the leaſt eſteem for me, and perſiſt in the deſign of giving me his daughter, when he heard of the affair between Mrs. *Lallin* and me. Be aſſur'd, ſays he, that whatever may be the reſult of it, 'tis a blot that will for ever exclude you from the hopes of marrying Miſs *Fanny*; and this reaſon, continued Mr. *Cleveland*, with a kind of indifference, is one of the ſtrongeſt which prompted me to tell you, that you ought for your own ſake to embrace the happy opportunity which Mrs. *Lallin* is ſo good as to indulge to you.

THIS malicious reflection made the deepeſt impreſſion upon me, for I found it but too well grounded, when beginning to conſider the unhappy accident which had befallen me, as the ruin of my love, I was immediately ſtruck with the deepeſt ſenſations of grief. My cruel grandfather was overjoy'd to ſee his tenderneſs and affection produce ſo ſtrange an effect; he had then brought me to that

frame

frame of mind he desir'd; that is to say, made me almost dead to the hopes of ever enjoying my dear *Fanny*, and the confidence I had in my Lord *Axminster*'s friendship. This he perceiv'd, and thereupon was so barbarous as to leave me immediately, on purpose to give the poison time to work, and spread with all its virulence. I conjur'd him at his leaving me, not to forget acquainting my lord *Axminster* with my confinement, which he promised to do; but then the manner he did it in prov'd fatal to me, and was the most dangerous of all his artifices.

I CONTINUED alone, oppress'd with inexpressible grief, and figur'd to myself the great astonishment my lord and Miss *Fanny* would be in, when they were told the false reasons of his majesty's displeasure, and of my confinement. I must naturally expect they would both hate and despise me. What a disadvantageous idea must they form to themselves with regard to my character! I had been so happy as to persuade them of my innocence in *Bayonne*, but this last accident reviv'd the former, and they would now believe me capable, not only of imposing upon them, but of heightening my

y knavery with perjury and hypocriſy: was therefore upon the point of loſing hat I valued moſt dear, his lordſhip's teem and Miſs *Fanny*'s love. I loſt hem by a horrid piece of treachery, which t the ſame time deſtroy'd my reputation, nd, to add to my unhappineſs, I was ot allow'd to defend and clear myſelf; nd indeed, my enemies employ'd all hoſe moments I ſpent in tears in endeavouring to ruin me. Mr. *Cleveland* waited upon my lord *Axminſter* the inſtant after he left me, but did not inform him of my misfortune, he knowing it before, when finding that he could ſcarce prevail with himſelf to think me guilty, he employ'd every argument to deſtroy thoſe kind inclinations which ſtill pleaded in my favour. He pretended that 'twas with grief he told his lordſhip, he was but too firmly perſuaded I was guilty of the odious cheat that was laid to my charge. He confeſs'd to his lordſhip, that he thought himſelf obliged to make ſome excuſes to him on that head, and that this was the only motive of his waiting upon him. He ſeem'd aſtoniſh'd to think that a man of my years, and with ſo fair an outſide of honour and integrity, could be capable of acting ſo vile a part.

part. I could never have believ'd it, ſays he, in opening the inſtrument which he had got out of the king's hands, were it not ſign'd by himſelf. Here 'tis; and indeed he has not aſſurance enough to deny his own hand writing. A circumſtance which comforts me is, that he ſeems willing to comply with his majeſty's commands, who is determin'd to force him to perform the contract.

My lord was a man of ſenſe and experience, who had reproach'd me a hundred times for my credulity, and had even leſſen'd it, by ſtrongly inculcating to me the depravity of mankind, and the ſuſpicion which a prudent man who lives in the world ought to guard himſelf with. However, he was impos'd upon by my enemies and his own: The accuſation appear'd to him ſo well grounded, that he even did not ſo much as deſire to ſee me, in order to enquire into it. He knew that Mrs. *Lallin* had complain'd to the king, and had left the contract in his hands; he ſaw it in Mr. *Cleveland*'s poſſeſſion, and he knew my hand, which alone was more than enough to perſuade him fully of my guilt. He now conſider'd me only as an ungrateful and perfidious Wretch, and thought that the beſt

eſt Way of revenging himſelf would be
o abandon me entirely, and to enjoin
is daughter to forget me for ever. As
he ſole motive of his ſtay at *Roan* was
n order to ſee her married to me, he re-
ſolved to leave it the moment he heard a
eſſel was ready. For that purpoſe, he ſent
mmediately to *Havre de Grace*, and a
hip happening to lie there, which was to
ail in five or ſix days for *Martinico*, he
eſolved to go on board her. He took
ut a very ſhort leave, and was inveſted
with the title of governor-general of the
Engliſh colonies in *America*, and having
received the laſt orders from his majeſty,
he ſet ſail with his daughter and Mrs.
Reding. His retinue conſiſted only of his
ſervants, and five or ſix *Engliſh* gentle-
men, who had left their native country,
and followed his fortune.

WHILST that ill ſtar was thus prepa-
ring the moſt tormenting ſubjects of an-
xiety, Mr. *Cleveland* chang'd his beha-
viour to me, and the place of my con-
finement; the conſtancy with which he
ſaw I lov'd my *Fanny* making him appre-
henſive that I ſhould endeavour to elope,
and afterwards find out expedients to
clear myſelf to my lord *Axminſter*; he
had therefore thought proper to remove

me

me to a ſtronger place, not only to prevent my eſcaping, but even to keep me in the dark as to my lord's and his daughter's departure. He had in all probability taken this reſolution in concert with Mrs. *Lallin*, ſince her houſe was made my priſon. He eaſily prevail'd with the king to leave me entirely to his diſpoſal. A weakneſs which clave to his majeſty ſo long as he liv'd was, to let himſelf be almoſt entirely govern'd by thoſe who had once gain'd an aſcendant over him. I was therefore carried that evening to Mrs. *Lallin*'s houſe, and confin'd a cloſe priſoner, and I was convey'd with ſo much privacy, that 'twas impoſſible for me to know where I was. There I met with handſome and even ſplendid treatment; but no perſon was admitted to me for ſome days, except Mr. *Cleveland*, who us'd to come and ſpend part of the afternoons with me. I conjur'd him over and over to tell me what this unaccountable procedure would end in, or at leaſt, to let me know how matters ſtood with my lord *Axminſter* and Miſs *Fanny*. To the firſt queſtion he anſwer'd, that they only obey'd the king's orders, and he had not yet been able to know directly what the king intended to do in the affair. That

th regard to my lord and his daughter e aſſur'd me, as he had done the firſt ay of my confinement, that I could not ſtly flatter myſelf any longer with the opes of becoming his ſon-in-law. How-ver, notwithſtanding the inexpreſſible neaſineſs which the continual repetition f this anſwer gave me, I yet had ſome ittle hopes left: I was ſenſible of his lord-hip's goodneſs, and relied ſtrongly on is daughter's tenderneſs. There was no oom to ſuppoſe that I ſhould be impri-on'd for life; and I only wiſh'd for a moment's liberty, in order to go and un-deceive thoſe two perſons for whom I had the higheſt value. I flatter'd myſelf with the hopes that my innocence would triumph over all Mrs. *Lallin*'s arts; for hitherto I had ſuſpected her only; and was ſo far from harbouring the leaſt ſuſpicion with regard to Mr. *Cleveland*, and being moreover perſuaded that he had the high-eſt value for me, I imagin'd he was very near as much troubled at my confinement as I was myſelf.

BUT now the miſtake I was under was going to clear up. Mr. *Cleveland* came and told me the day my lord *Axminſter* was to leave *France:* A fatal day! whence I ought to date the beginning of my de-

plorable

plorable adventures. I was revolving the moſt gloomy thoughts in my mind, when Mr. *Cleveland* came in with ſuch an air of ſatisfaction, as made me flatter myſelf that he brought good news. You ſhall, ſays he, enjoy your liberty whenever you think proper; his majeſty conſents to it, becauſe he now hopes that, as my lord *Axminſter* and his daughter are gone for *America*, you'll no longer ſcruple to marry Mrs. *Lallin*. He was going to embrace me as uſual, but did not perceive that this dreadful relation depriv'd me of all my faculties, and that I was hardly able to ſupport myſelf. Alas! ſays I, in a quite different tone, let me alone; don't you perceive that you've cruelly kill'd me, and that I can ſcarce breathe! and indeed I turn'd ſo pale, that he thought I was going to faint away: However, I refus'd the aſſiſtance he offer'd me, and cry'd, as I puſh'd him from me, let me alone; I hate every thing that would keep me from dying. If my lord and *Fanny* are gone, I've then quite loſt their eſteem and affection, two bleſſings I cannot poſſibly outlive, upon which, I ſat down, and would neither look upon, nor hear him ſpeak.

THIS tenderneſs for me, which was yond all expreſſion, was truly alarm'd, hen he found me obſtinately ſilent, and ſuch a poſture as made him doubt whe- er my life were not in danger. He call'd e ſervants immediately to my aſſiſtance, hen Mrs. *Lallin* came running in before y of them appear'd. If all my faculties ere before ſuſpended, I recover'd them e inſtant I ſaw her, when I broke into e moſt injurious reproaches, and call'd er by all the odious names I could ink of. She had a real affection for e, and I am obliged to own, that tho' e had been ſo weak as to ſecond Mr. *leveland*'s deſign, ſhe nevertheleſs was ge- erous and equitable. She was ſo ſtrong- affected with my reproaches, that burſt- g into a flood of tears, ſhe turn'd about o my grandfather, and exclaim'd bitterly t the ſcandalous affair he had engag'd er in. Her complaints, and the excuſes he made me, let me into the whole arti- ce; and 'twas here that being then more ertain than ever of my ruin, of my be- g betray'd and deſpis'd by my lord *lxminſter*, and abandon'd by my dear *anny*, that I fainted away at Mrs. *Lal- n*'s feet.

THIS ſhock'd her ſo much, that after having uſed all her endeavours to revive me, ſhe deſir'd Mr. *Cleveland* to leave her houſe, and never to ſet his foot in it any more. He thought himſelf obliged to ſubmit for a moment, and accordingly went away, and left me alone with her: But now the tears which ſtream'd from her eyes, and her tender excuſes, perſuaded me that ſhe repented of what ſhe had done. Alas! ſaid I, I forgive you, and I ſee but too plainly that you were ſeduc'd to be inſtrumental to my ruin; but if you have really done this, there is yet a way left for you to make me forget the injury I have received at your hands, which is, to procure me the liberty of leaving this city. I am now in your houſe, as I may eaſily judge by the words you juſt now ſpoke to Mr. *Cleveland:* Open the door to me, and then, ſo far from conſidering you as my enemy, I ſhall think I owe my life to your goodneſs. She might naturally ſuppoſe that I wiſhed to be releas'd, only that I might be at liberty to follow my lord *Axminſter* and his daughter. But as my flight interfer'd ſo much with the paſſion ſhe had for me, ſhe anſwer'd with downcaſt eyes, that ſhe expected I ſhould have made a quite

quite different return for the great regret he had ſhewn for giving me ſo much uneaſineſs; that indeed ſhe had been made to act a part quite oppoſite to her character and inclination, in being drawn into the cruel plot which had occaſioned my confinement; however, that ſhe could not repent ſhe had torn me from a rival who had never lov'd me ſo tenderly as herſelf; that as neither her perſon nor her fortune were contemptible, ſhe offer'd me both of them, and was perſuaded, that when once I ſhould be acquainted with the inward receſſes of her heart, I ſhould not repent of my conqueſt over it. She heighten'd theſe words with a thouſand tender glances, and with all that a modeſt woman can employ to move the breaſt of the man ſhe loves. My temper was ſuch, that this ingenuous freedom was more capable of making an impreſſion on my heart than all the arts of cunning and deceit. I told her this without the leaſt diſguiſe; aſſur'd her that I would again eſteem her, and that were I free, I ſhould very probably have been ſenſible to emotions of a more tender nature. But, ſaid I, I idolize this rival you would ſupplant: I had the happineſs of being dear to her, and 'tis you have torn

me from her heart; nothing ſhall prevent my flying after her, to juſtify myſelf to the dear creature, and die at her feet. If you, ſaid I again, are tender and generous, indulge me that liberty; this is the only teſtimony I deſire of your affection, or that I can be ſenſible of. After reflecting a moment on this propoſal, I cannot, ſays ſhe, let you go away in the condition you are now in; you are in want of every thing, and I love you too well to ſee you ſet out without thoſe things which will be neceſſary for your voyage. Give me leave, ſays ſhe, now to make you an offer: Let me go along with you; I'll ſell my eſtate, and thence raiſe a ſum that will make you happy, in what part ſoever of the world you may happen to be caſt. Struck with ſo extraordinary a propoſal, I diſcover'd the utmoſt aſtoniſhment at it: Alas! ſays I, what hopes would you thence feed yourſelf with? Do you, madam, conſider that 'twill be impoſſible for me ever to be yours, and that you'd certainly undertake the voyage to no purpoſe? She proteſted that ſhe only deſir'd to go along with me: However, don't think, ſays ſhe, but that I have ſome reaſons to make you this odd offer. There are two very ſtrong ones,

nes, abſtracted from the love I have for ou; one is, the loſs of my reputation, hich it will be impoſſible for me ever to ecover, except I marry you; for notithſtanding the ſolemn promiſes which Mr. *Cleveland* made me, the whole city inform'd of the ſteps I have taken (by is perſuaſion) to break off your marriage ith my lord *Axminſter*'s daughter; and is known that you are now actually conin'd in my houſe, tho' I took the utmoſt are to prevent it. I am now become the eſt of all companies; but this I look'd upon s a trifle ſo long as I had hopes of being yours; marriage would have wip'd off the ſtain; but if you abſolutely refuſe to conſent to it, it will be impoſſible for me to live any longer in this city, where I am certainly diſhonour'd to all intents and purpoſes. Another reaſon, ſays ſhe, which is equally ſtrong, is, my brother's continual threats; he is highly exaſperated againſt me, ever ſince he ſuſpected I betray'd him, and would have quite diſpatch'd me, had he not thought the wound he gave me before his ſetting out mortal: He has heard of my recovery, and the cloſe correſpondence I have ſince carried on with his enemies. I receive letters every poſt from him, full of the

moſt cutting reproaches, and the moſt dreadful oaths, by which he proteſts he'll one day or other kill me with his own hand. I know his temper, and that he is capable of perpetrating ſo cruel an action; and I don't doubt but he'll be doubly enrag'd when he hears of this laſt adventure: I am therefore, ſays ſhe, equally oblig'd, for the ſake of my honour, and the ſafety of my own life, to leave *Roan*. With whom then can I fly with greater pleaſure than with you? In caſe my tenderneſs and aſſiduity ſhould be able to gain me your heart, 'twill be happy for me that I followed you, and you will then grant me what you refuſe me here. On the other ſide, if you ſtill continue conſtant to my lord *Axminſter*'s daughter, let me yet go with you to her; I'll prove your innocence to that happy woman, and then I hope the ſervice I ſhall have done you will engage her father to protect me. After ſaying this, ſhe deſir'd me to give her my opinion of the matter.

'Tis certain, that how extravagant ſoever this propoſal ſeem'd at firſt, it now appear'd in a quite different light: My own intereſt ſeem'd to require I ſhould conſent to it; for ſhe had reaſon to obſerve

rve that I was unprovided with every ing: Mr. *Cleveland* was the only per- n from whom I could expect the ſeveral ings neceſſary for this voyage, and 'tis lain I could not hope for any aſſiſtance om him on this occaſion. However, e view of furniſhing myſelf with neceſ- ries, was not barely ſufficient to prompt e to accept of Mrs. *Lallin*'s offer; for foreſaw that the advantage I might ap, with regard to her clearing me to y lord and Miſs *Fanny*, would not per- aps balance the ill effect her preſence ight occaſion, as it would make them hink ſhe had follow'd me purely out of ove. I made this objection to her, but he anſwer'd it only by her tears, and by repreſenting to me that ſo weak a reaſon ſhould not make me refuſe to indulge her a favour which would at once ſecure both her happineſs and her life. I grant- ed her requeſt, and heaven is witneſs that I was not prompted to conſent to it from any other motives than thoſe of huma- nity and tenderneſs, which melted me at the ſight of her misfortunes, and made me wiſh I could aſſiſt all the unfor- tunate.

THE only thing now to be done was, to raiſe a ſum of money, and to keep our

departure a ſecret. Mrs. *Lallin* told me, that in a city like *Roan* ſhe could in an hour's time turn all her eſtate into ready money. And indeed, ſhe went out that moment, and got bills to the value of a hundred thouſand crowns. She did not wrong any perſon by this, ſince ſhe made over to them lands of a much greater value. She ſpent the reſt of the day in privately getting a Coach for us, in order to go to the port, where we flatter'd ourſelves we ſhould find a veſſel juſt ready to ſet ſail. She entruſted no one with this ſecret but a man and maid-ſervant of her's, and we propoſed to ſet out the next night. Mr. *Cleveland* came and viſited me that day, tho' Mrs. *Lallin* had deſir'd never to ſee him more: He was ſurpriz'd to ſee me more chearful than uſual; and as he had left me a few hours before alone with Mrs. *Lallin*, he imputed this alteration to the converſation I had had with her; when imagining that ſhe poſſibly had made ſome conqueſt over my heart, it pleas'd him ſo much, that he promis'd to procure me my liberty the next morning. Before he left me, I artfully enquir'd of him the courſe my lord *Axminſter* had taken, and where the king had order'd him to make the firſt attempt. He told me, that his

s lordſhip was gone directly for *Marti-co*, he not meeting with a veſſel that ould carry him to any place nearer ur colonies; from thence he was to go o *Jamaica*, or *New-England*, as opportu-ity might offer for his making for either f thoſe places with eaſe and expedition.

NIGHT being come, and Mrs. *Lallin* eing equally free with myſelf, we left he houſe, bringing away ſeveral trunks, nd our two ſervants, and went on foot o the city gate, where the coach was waiting for us. We arriv'd happily at he port by four in the morning: I im-mediately enquir'd for a veſſel that was ready to ſail for the *American* iſlands, and was told that the laſt which was to make the voyage that year had ſet ſail ſome days before, which was that my lord *Ax-minſter* was gone a-board of. We conſi-der'd whether we ſhould go to *Rochel*, when ſome *Engliſh* people, who happen'd to be in the port, adviſ'd us, as the ſafeſt and moſt expeditious way, to go for *England*, and told us we ſhould not fail meeting with a veſſel for our purpoſe, ſhips being continually going out of the *Thames* for thoſe parts. Mrs. *Lallin* was afraid leſt her brother ſhould diſcover her, and I too had my own apprehenſions:

However, as we had the greateſt danger to fear from *France*, we embark'd on board the firſt ſhip that ſail'd for *England*, where we arriv'd in leſs than eight and forty hours; and, by the moſt happy turn of fortune, as we thought, met, juſt as we were going to land, with a man of war that was then ſetting ſail for *Jamaica*, and accordingly we went on board without going aſhore. The captain was mightily pleas'd to take us in, as we appear'd to be perſons of ſome diſtinction. In four days we loſt ſight of *Europe*.

I MUST confeſs, that in the midſt of my anxiety, 'twas yet a great pleaſure to me to think that I was daily coming nearer to my dear Miſs *Fanny*, and did not for ſome time reflect that both my lord and his amiable daughter were exaſperated againſt me to ſuch a degree, that they had left *Europe* without taking the leaſt notice of me. So far from conſidering this circumſtance, I fancied that we ſhould be equally delighted to ſee each other, and that the pleaſure of finding me follow them to *America*, would reſtore me to their love and eſteem. I mention this ſhort-liv'd joy, and which too was purely ideal, becauſe 'tis the laſt I ever taſted that was unembitter'd with ſorrow;

rrow; for now my misfortunes were egun, and if heaven was to change them, was only to make them ſtill more grie- ous: If it had yet any pleaſure in ſtore or me, it was to be turn'd to ſorrow; and rom an odd turn of fate, ſo unaccount- ble a felicity awaited me as was deſtin'd to lunge me into the deepeſt diſtreſſes; a elicity that could not be extreme with- ut being accompanied with inſupport- ble torments.

THE firſt days on board a ſhip were ſpent in getting acquaintance. I became very intimate with the captain, whoſe name was Mr. *John Wills*, who appear'd to be a man of great honour and genero- ſity, two circumſtances which above all others were moſt capable of making me eſteem him. I ſtudied him before I ad- mitted him to an intimate familiarity, and was perſuaded, after I had followed all the maxims that prudence ſuggeſted on this occaſion, that I might chuſe him for my friend. I never could be brought to believe, even after he had acted a moſt vile part, that I was miſtaken in my judgment, and that he was naturally a villain. When I firſt became acquainted with him he was an upright and ſincere man, and this I am ſtill perſuaded of;

but into what iniquity will not our paſſions lead us when we abandon ourſelves blindly to their conduct! He betray'd me, he expos'd me to inexpreſſible misfortunes, and yet I have ſuch an aſcendant over my reſentments, that I forgive him. He abus'd my confidence, to ruin the moſt amiable man living; a man who was my deareſt friend. I have left heaven to revenge the injury that was done me, but cannot forbear wiſhing to ſee its vengeance break forth.

We had ſoon contracted ſo ſtrict an intimacy, that all the time I did not employ in reading or converſing with Mrs. *Lallin*, I ſpent with him. He reveal'd to me the moſt hidden receſſes of his heart: All his affairs, not excepting thoſe of his family concerns, his pleaſures and his pains, were lodg'd in my boſom, as in the ſanctuary of friendſhip. I did not at firſt open myſelf to him with ſo little reſerve, not having forgot my lord *Axminſter*'s precepts, nor the things I had lately experienc'd. However, finding him to be of a ſerious and ſolid turn of mind, I did not ſcruple, after we had been on board a few weeks, to inform him who I was, and to let him into part of my ſtory. He received the ſecrets I entruſted

truſted him with as I had done his, that in ſeeming ſtrongly affected with what old him, and in repeating his aſſurance loving me as long as he liv'd. Hi-erto I had let him into thoſe particu-rs of my life in which I myſelf only s concern'd, but had not once open'd y lips either about my lord *Axminſter* Mrs. *Lallin*, well knowing that a man honour is to make a wide difference tween his own ſecrets and thoſe of his ends. But as it was impoſſible but my ther muſt ſometimes be mention'd in nverſation, he was ſo far from appear-g a zealous ſtickler for the *Protector*, at he on the contrary ſeem'd to deplore, ith all good *Engliſhmen*, the miſeries f our unhappy country. I was pleaſed o find in him theſe ſentiments; and after greater familiarity had confirm'd me in he good opinion I had entertain'd of him, imagin'd it might be poſſible for me o win him over to king *Charles*'s inte-reſt, and conſequently thoſe of my lord *Axminſter*; and my firſt overtures prov'd ſo ſucceſsful, that I did not doubt but I had made an entire conqueſt. I told him the ſecret of my lord's voyage, upon his gi-ving me his word and oath that he would never reveal it, and he engag'd to get

into his lordſhip's acquaintance as ſoon as he ſhould meet with an opportunity: His perſon, his ſhip, in ſhort, every thing he had in the world ſhould be at my lord's ſervice, and he even wiſh'd he could go and take him in at *Martinico*; and ſaid he would have done it, had he not been afraid 'twould prejudice the king's affairs, which he now began to conſider as his own. But having no pretence to go ſo far out of his courſe, he reſolved, in concert with me, that in caſe the viſcount did not go immediately for *Jamaica*, we then would fit out a veſſel from that iſland under a ſhew of trade, which ſhould take his lordſhip in, and bring him to us. I again repeat, that captain *Wills* was ſincere in his reſolutions, and therefore tho' the confidence I plac'd in him prov'd unlucky, it yet was neither light or imprudent.

ALL this time Mrs. *Lallin* ſeemed very eaſy, and my eſteem for her was very much increaſed, from the time of our becoming aſſociates in diſtreſs. I admir'd her wit, her complacency and politeneſs; and notwithſtanding ſhe lov'd me as dearly as ever, ſhe now thought the utmoſt ſhe cou'd hope for from me was my friendſhip and reſpect. I had ſo often aſſur'd

er that I ſhou'd for ever love my lord *Axminſter*'s daughter, that ſhe ſeem'd to ave reſign'd all her pretenſions to me, nd diſcover'd her paſſion no otherwiſe, han by her continual aſſiduity and com-laiſance; in a word, ſhe obſerv'd the romiſe ſhe had made me at *Roan* to a ittle. She had appear'd lovely in the yes of captain *Wills*; and indeed, ſhe was too beautiful for a mariner. Perhaps he thought ſo at firſt; for he had hither-to behav'd in the moſt reſpectful manner, and we united our endeavours to teach Mrs. *Lallin Engliſh*, which ſhe wou'd ab-ſolutely want in *Jamaica*. But now his familiarity growing inſenſibly into paſ-ſion, his behaviour, with regard to her, was ſo chang'd, that ſhe one day was forced to complain to me about it. I had now ſo high a value for Mrs. *Lallin* that I wou'd have run all hazards to ſe-cure her from an inſult, and therefore mention'd the affair very ſeriouſly to captain *Wills*, who did not ſeem to take umbrage at what I ſaid, but turn'd cer-tain not altogether decent expreſſions he made uſe of, into raillery; and aſſuring me that he had the higheſt eſteem for her, he behav'd for ſome days with greater re-ſerve. However, at the ſame time that he

he ſeem'd to act more cautiouſly with regard to her, he grew more cool to me. Mrs. *Lallin* told me one day, with tears in her eyes, that captain *Wills* had been very inquiſitive with regard to the ſtrict intimacy he obſerv'd to be between us; and that ſhe having told him I was her nephew, as had been agreed upon between us at our going on board, he ſhook his head, and told her that he knew a great many relations, who, in reality, were as little ſo as Mrs. *Lallin* and I; and that in caſe ſhe were my aunt in that ſenſe, he hoped ſhe wou'd at leaſt be ſo good as to become his couſin. He has, ſays ſhe, ſince repeated his inſolence, and gave me to underſtand that every woman who ventures her ſelf on board a ſhip, ought to indulge ſome favours to the captain.

I cou'd not comprehend how it was poſſible for a man who appear'd ſo generous and polite, to forget himſelf ſo far, and therefore hinted it to him a ſecond time. He had ſcarce patience to hear me out, but bluntly told me, that I had for ſome time given my ſelf ſuch airs as though I were maſter of the ſhip, but that I ſhou'd do well to remember that he was mine. My maſter! ſays I to him, no, captain *Wills*, you are my friend;

you

u are a man of honour, whom I ſin-
ely love and reſpect; but then I muſt
ire you to conſider, that you have no
thority over either my aunt or me. I
d no ſooner ſpoke theſe words, but he
t me, without once opening his lips.
for my ſelf, I behaved towards him as
fore; but it was eaſy to be perceiv'd by
s ſullenneſs and continual muſing, that
was meditating upon ſomething very
rticular.

WE had now been about ſix weeks at
a, and ſo far from meeting with tem-
eſtuous weather, we had been becalm'd
r near a fortnight, which had retarded
ur courſe very much. One morning we
y'd a ſail, croſſing juſt by us, within
annon ſhot. She bore *Engliſh* colours,
nd our captain ſeeing her veer'd the ſails,
n order to go on board her. Coming
p with her that inſtant, he order'd the
ong-boat to be put out; upon which I
ffer'd to wait upon him, but he refus'd.
imagin'd that he only wanted to enquire
ow things ſtood in thoſe ſeas, and whither
he other captain was bound. He did not
tay above a quarter of an hour on board,
when I ſaw him return with ſome per-
ſons from the other ſhip; and theſe I
ſuppos'd to be ſome of his countrymen,

whom

whom he was bringing on board his ow
veſſel by way of compliment. They go
into the ſhip, and the firſt thing captai
Wills did, was to take me by the collar
and cry that he arreſted me in the protec
tor's name, and that of the parliament
Immediately he gave orders for m
being bound, at which I was ſo ſurpriz'
that I cou'd not ſpeak a ſingle word
And this being done, I was that inſtan
put into the long-boat, and carried o
board the other ſhip. This was done ſo
ſuddenly, that I had ſcarce time to ſee
Mrs. *Lallin*, who held out her hands t
me, and broke into the moſt lamentable
cries at the ſight, and at the ſame time
to think of what would become of her.

I WAS immediately put down into
the hold, where I was left bound. I
continued alone till the two ſhips had
weigh'd anchor. 'Twas manifeſt that
captain *Wills* was a villain, who had de-
liver'd me up as an enemy to the pro-
tector; and that his love for Mrs. *Lallin*
had prompted him to this vile action.
The firſt emotions of my compaſſion a-
roſe for that unhappy lady. How unhap-
py, ſaid I, muſt ſhe be, to ſee herſelf
under the abſolute command of a wretch
who has perpetrated ſo black an action!

I in-

nvok'd heaven, which alone was able protect her. I had not voluntarily contributed to her misfortunes; but then I as forced to confeſs that I was the firſt uſe of them. She wou'd have lived aceably in *Roan*, had ſhe never known e; or at leaſt, ſhe wou'd not have exs'd herſelf to dangers upon the ſea, hich probably were now impending. y obligations to her gave me as much neaſineſs as cou'd have roſe from remorſe, ad I really been the cauſe of her ruin.

BUT now what muſt I, whoſe thoughts ere thus employ'd in bewailing the l fate of others, think of my ſelf? I as betray'd by a perfidious wretch; nto whoſe hands he had deliver'd me. My chains plainly ſhew'd I was look'd pon as a traitor; and I had reaſon to beieve that I was to be carried to *England*. ſuppos'd that the ſhip I was on board f was bound for thoſe parts, and that he perfidious *Wills* had given the captain uch inſtructions as would complete my uin. I expected death, and what was much more grievous, that I ſhould never e able to recover my lord *Axminſter*'s eſteem, and my ever dear Miſs *Fanny*'s ove, before that fatal day happen'd. They'll never, ſaid I, hear of this ſad cata-

cataſtrophe, and in caſe they do, they won't pity me. How can I flatter my ſelf ſo far as to think they'll ever be inform'd of my innocence! How cruel ſoever theſe reflections might be, they yet were infinitely leſs grievous than that which aroſe a moment after in my mind. I conſider'd, that *Wills*'s treachery wou'd not extend barely to me; and that a villain being always completely ſo, he would certainly involve my lord *Axminſter* in my ruin. This thought ruſh'd in ſo ſuddenly upon my mind, and in ſo dreadful a ſhape, that it cauſed a kind of ſilence in my ſoul, and damp'd all my faculties. I was fix'd in ſuch deep aſtoniſhment that I was altogether immoveable. O abominable crime! O deep affliction! cry'd I; I've betray'd my dear patron, my father, my benefactor; I've betray'd my adorable *Fanny*, Mrs. *Reding*; the only perſons upon earth I ought to love and reſpect. My indiſcreet conduct will coſt them their lives. Alas! 'tis I only who now deſerve death; if it be not to atone for my guilt, at leaſt let me die to remove my ſhame and infamy from my own eyes. I continued above a quarter of an hour in this dreadful anxiety, and even hated my ſelf. I wiſhed to be at *London*, and that

the

he executioner was putting an end to ll my misfortunes. Nor indeed was it oſſible for any man's fate to be more retched than mine: I was expos'd a third ime to be accuſed of perfidy, a thing my very nature abhorr'd. My falſe or involuntary crimes produced the ſame effect as tho' they were real ones, and had been perpetrated deſignedly. The moſt inveterate enemy the viſcount and his daughter had in the world cou'd not have ruin'd them more effectually than I had done. And yet what in the world cou'd be more dear and valuable to me than thoſe two amiable perſons? For whom cou'd I with ſo much pleaſure have laid down my life as for them? The one had uſed me with the tenderneſs of a father, and the other was the idol of my heart. Alas! there once was a time when I was allowed to think I was dear to them.

I KNOW not whither thoſe dreadful reflections wou'd have carried me, had not the captain viſited me about an hour after they had weigh'd anchor, and the ſhip was ſteering her courſe. At his coming down, he told me he had been very impatient to hear from my own mouth whether thoſe things which captain *Wills* accuſed me of were true or no.

Don't

Don't be dejected, ſays he, you've fallen into better hands than you imagine; but here I deſire you to be ſincere in what I wou'd know from you. A requeſt made with ſo much warmth, put me into a freſh dilemma. I was afraid he wou'd be angry in caſe I did not inform him of every particular which the treacherous captain *Wills* might have let him into; and I was ſtill more perplex'd, leſt in my endeavours to gratify him I ſhould diſcover ſeveral circumſtances with regard to my lord *Axminſter* and my ſelf, which *Wills* might poſſibly not have told him. I obſerv'd indeed in his countenance, and the tone of his voice, ſomething vaſtly engaging, which ſeem'd to ſpeak him a man of honour; but how cou'd I henceforwards rely on the outſide and ſhew, after having been ſo vilely betray'd by captain *Wills?* I reflected on thoſe circumſtances almoſt at one and the ſame time, when I reſolv'd to be ſincere even in the moſt minute circumſtances which related to my ſelf, and not once to mention my lord *Axminſter* or his deſigns, unleſs the queſtions he aſk'd me might force me to it. I begun by telling him plainly, that I was *Oliver*'s ſon, but an unhappy one, whom my father had refus'd

s'd to own, and even abandoned before ny birth. I ſet his cruelty in the ſtrongeſt ght, to juſtify an averſion which was as atural in me as tenderneſs is in other ons. I related my mother's misfortunes o him, and her melancholy end; and as ny heart had not been able to recover rom the grief with which it was ſeiz'd a noment before, the remembrance of my lear mother melted me ſo much that I burſt into tears. I interrupted my rela- ion to wipe them away, and afterwards raiſing my eyes to the captain, I was ſur- priz'd to perceive that he himſelf cry'd as he look'd at me. I aſcrib'd his tears to his compaſſion. May heaven, ſays I, reward that generous pity which makes you take ſo great a ſhare in my pains! I was going to reſume my ſtory; ſtop, a- miable young man, ſays he, with a voice interrupted by ſighs, ſtop. Let me firſt take off theſe manacles which ſuit ill with your hands; I'm heartily ſorry you have worn them ſo long. Saying this, he him- ſelf took them off, and taking me by the hand, he led me into his own cabbin, when he ſhut the door, and ſet me down by him.

HE appear'd abſent in thought, and fix'd his eyes ſtedfaſtly upon me for ſome moments.

moments. The ſigns plainly reveal'd his inward anxiety. Acquaint me, ſays he, more fully with your ſtory, and by what caprice of fortune the firſt ſtages of your life happen'd to bear ſo great a reſemblance to thoſe of mine. You are *Oliver*'s ſon, you ſay, but what was the name of your mother, who ſuffer'd ſo much from your father's cruelty and injuſtice? I anſwer'd that her name was *Cleveland*. Alas! ſays he, I never heard of it. You won't wonder at it when I inform you in what manner I was brought up. But ſurely you cannot but have heard of *Molly Bridge* and her unhappy ſon. My aſtoniſhment, and the anſwer I made, gave him immediately to underſtand that I was inform'd both of his name and misfortunes. *Molly Bridge*, ſays I, that lived in *Rumney-Marſh*, and was brought up by Mrs. *Reding!* you ſee him before you, ſays he, embracing me tenderly; I am he. I took him in my arms, dear captain *Bridge*, ſaid I, how good is heaven to me, in making me find a friend in the very man to whom I was deliver'd as an enemy! How are the black deſigns of that villain *Wills* now fruſtrated! But I muſt beg you to inform me how it is poſſible for you to be alive, ſince Mrs. *Reding* believ'd

you

ou dead, and ſo often told me your ſad ory? He promis'd to inform me how eaven had wrought a miracle in his fa- our; but rejoice at it, ſays he, only as am this day ſo happy as to be of ſervice o you, for life is now ſo great a burden o me, that I cannot look upon my be- ng preſerv'd as a happineſs.

HE then preſs'd me to acquaint him with the preſent ſtate of my affairs, and he reaſon why captain *Wills* had put ne into his hands, in order to be carried o *England*, and deliver'd up to *Oliver*. related in few words my ſtrict intimacy with my lord *Axminſter*, and the motives which had engaged me to follow him to *America*. I told him that the nobleman bovementionʼd had orders from the king o engage the colonies, if poſſible, to re- turn to their allegiance; that as I was a rue royaliſt, I had endeavour'd to gain ver captain *Wills* to that party, and ad met with ſucceſs; but that his violent ffection for a lady who was under my rotection had drawn upon me his utmoſt atred, and prompted him to treachery. I fterwards let him into Mrs. *Lallin*'s cha- acter, and the numberleſs obligations I ow'd her; which inſpir'd him with ſuch n averſion for captain *Wills*, that he im-

mediately told me he was very ſorry his ſhip was not in a condition to attack a man of war. This declaration gave me the utmoſt pain, for my only aim in telling him this circumſtance, was in order to engage him to reſcue Mrs. *Lallin*. I even was again urgent with him to attempt ſomething for her ſake; but telling me that he had no cannon on board, tho' his veſſel was intended for a thirty gun ſhip, and had but few ſmall arms, all I cou'd then do was to bewail the fate of that unfortunate woman, and pray to heaven for her deliverance. Providence was ſo good as to indulge in ſome meaſure my requeſt. The bad condition of my brother's ſhip made me ſtill more curious to know his adventures, and whither he was bound; which he related as follows.

I SHALL not repeat the particulars of my firſt misfortunes, and thoſe of my mother, ſince Mrs. *Reding* has inform'd you of them; but ſhall date my relation from the laſt viſit I made our father, or rather tyrant. I was ſo ſilly as to perſuade my ſelf, notwithſtanding what Mrs. *Reding* inculcated to the contrary, that it was impoſſible for a parent to ſuppreſs all the tender ſenſations of nature.

I thought

thought he cou'd not be juſtly accuſed of my mother's unfortunate death; and ſuppoſing he had had any ſhare in it, I did not think this cou'd diſpenſe me ſufficiently from paying him the duties which as a ſon I owed him; nor hinder me from expecting to be treated by him with a paternal indulgence. I even expected, that the reſolution I had taken of viſiting him privately, before I told publickly how nearly I was related to him, wou'd prejudice him in my favour. Upon this ſuppoſition, I waited on him; and pretending that I had a ſecret to communicate, I was immediately introduced. He was alone, and I was going to throw my ſelf at his feet, when my eagerneſs to do it made him fancy that I had a deſign upon his life; upon which he call'd for his guards, and commanded them to ſeize me. He made them ſearch me in his preſence, to ſee whether I had any arms about me; a ceremony I had ſubmitted to before I was admitted into his apartment. Finding all was ſafe, he order'd the guards to withdraw; and I went up to him a ſecond time, in order to throw my ſelf at his feet, when I told him with a modeſt aſſurance, the motives which had prompted me to addreſs him. No ſooner had I

mention'd my mother's name, but I plainly perceiv'd by his countenance that it gave him great uneaſineſs. He threw his eyes round to ſee if no one had heard me; when coming up to me, and taking me by the arm, Wretch! ſays he, thou deſerveſt death for preſuming to act ſo villanous a part. As thou art young I forgive thee, but will know who has ſeduc'd thee. In the mean time, beware how thou informeſt any perſon of the affront thou haſt put upon me, as thou wiſheſt not to die in the midſt of torments. He call'd his guards a ſecond time, and commanded a party of them to carry me to the ſtrongeſt priſon in the city. I trembled when I left the apartments, for his eyes, and the tone of his voice terrified me no leſs than his threats.

At my firſt coming into goal, I was left in one of the common rooms of it; but ſcarce had I been there an hour, when a freſh order came for my being confin'd in one of its darkeſt dungeons, where I was left ſome hours without ſeeing one human creature. The little ſuſtenance that was allowed me was let down by a rope through a hole in the ceiling. I expected death every moment, tho' I was conſcious of my innocence, and had certainly

ainly nothing to reproach myſelf with. Brute creatures, ſaid I to myſelf, in the bitterneſs of my ſoul; ſavage beaſts are tender to their young, and I am ſon to a man who condemns me cruelly to die, becauſe I dare preſume to call him father! I recollected Mrs. *Reding*'s advice, and reproach'd myſelf for being ſo preſumptuouſly ſilly as to neglect it. I invok'd my mother's ghoſt to my aſſiſtance, and with tears begg'd her to pardon me for not taking warning by her untimely end. In fine, after having ſpent a week in this miſerable place, I was taken out of it, and carried into a large room, where two perſons, who appear'd to be men of diſtinction, were waiting for me. They enquir'd very artfully where I had been brought up, and the perſons who had taken care of my education. I had too great a ſoul to betray Mrs. *Reding*. They judg'd by my obſtinate ſilence, and my reſolution when they threaten'd me, that 'twould be but loſt labour to urge me farther. I ſuppoſe they had orders only to frighten me: One of them told me that I ſhould immediately be ſet at liberty, and that the protector was ſo gracious as to give me my life; but that in caſe I preſum'd to repeat the inſult to his highneſs, I

might expect the moſt dreadful puniſhment that could poſſibly be inflicted; but they neither told me my crime, nor the outrage I had committed in regard to the lord protector.

But now I was taken out of priſon: The liberty with which I had been flatter'd was my being carried immediately on board a ſhip which was going to ſail forthwith for *Nevis*, where a colony was then raiſing. I was indeed neither manacled nor fetter'd, but then I was put among a company of miſerable wretches, the greateſt part whereof had been condemned for different crimes to the ſame puniſhment with myſelf. I was now obliged to change my dreſs, and put on one ſuitable to my preſent condition. Words can never expreſs how greatly I was dejected. I was wholly unacquainted with my fate; I heard the companions of my ill fortune ſpeak of *Nevis* as a ſmall iſland that was barren and uninhabited, where we were to be uſed as ſlaves, and to plough the ground. So mean an employment made me wiſh for death, as the ſole remedy for all my evils. I ſpent day after day in ſighing in ſome corner of the ſhip; and I ſeldom join'd in converſation with thoſe fellows, tho' it was impoſſible for me to avoid their company. I CAN-

I CANNOT ſay whether 'twas in a natural way, or by the miraculous aſſiſtance of heaven, that I ſuddenly perceived a glimpſe of hopes in the midſt of my diſtreſs. What I am now going to relate is ſo ſurpriſing, that you'll hardly believe me on my bare word: Nothing but your meeting my ſhip in this vaſt ocean, and the teſtimony of the ſailors, will be able to remove your incredulity at firſt; afterwards, in caſe you continue a conſiderable time with me, and we are ſo happy as to find out what I have been three months in ſearch of, the ſight of the wonders you will then ſee, will fully juſtify me in every particular.

IN the mean time I grew ſo melancholy, that it would have been impoſſible for me to live had it continued. One day as I was alone, and eaſing my ſorrows by ſhedding tears, an old woman I had hitherto taken no notice of, came up to me in a very civil manner. She was not dreſt after the *Engliſh* faſhion, and tho' ſhe ſpoke our language with propriety, one could nevertheleſs perceive that ſhe was a foreigner. There was ſomething amiable in her face, tho' time had made deep furrows in it; and her eyes diſcover'd ſome remains of that ſprightly

fire which ſeems to be of the ſame ſubſtance with the ſoul, or at leaſt of that which comes neareſt to it. I was ſo ſtruck with her, that tho' ſhe was in a mean dreſs, I roſe up out of civility when ſhe ſpoke to me. She then ask'd me why I cry'd, when I anſwer'd in the moſt moving manner, that I was an unfortunate young man, the ſport of fortune, and the refuſe of nature; and that tho' I were to ſhed never ſo many tears, my misfortunes would require more. I have obſerved you, ſays ſhe, for ſome days with the utmoſt attention, and was ſurprized to ſee you ſo greatly dejected. The company, and the dreſs you are in ſeem very unſuitable to you: Reveal your woes to me, and I poſſibly may be of ſervice to you, in caſe I am not miſtaken in the opinion I have of you. Alas! ſays I, my misfortunes are not of ſuch a nature as to force a bluſh from me: Wou'd to heaven they did not give me ſo much anxiety! But the barbarous wretches who ſentenc'd me to baniſhment, threaten to kill me in caſe I dare reveal their injuſtice. Thus am I oblig'd to ſuffer evils undeſerv'd, and be even denied the conſolation of bewailing them. What you now tell me, ſays the old woman, only heightens my curioſity:

curioſity: If you were not born, as one would imagine you were not by your outward appearance, to this miſerable condition, and have not committed any action for which you juſtly deſerve to be ſentenced to it, I look upon you to be worthy of the utmoſt compaſſion.

THESE words ſooth'd my ſorrows ſo agreeably, that I reſolved to ſuppreſs thoſe fears which prompted me to conceal my ſad ſtory, and accordingly I related to this charitable comforter my ſeveral misfortunes, and even thoſe of my mother. She diſcover'd the ſtrongeſt emotions of pity and aſtoniſhment as ſhe liſten'd, and when I had done, only exhorted me to arm my breaſt with courage and reſolution, and that I might depend upon receiving unexpected relief from her. She then left me without ſaying more. I was very curious to know who ſhe was; and enquiring, all I could learn was, that ſhe was a foreigner, who had agreed with the captain of the ſhip to carry her to the iſland of St. *Helena*, where the veſſel was to touch. I diſcours'd with her the next and the following days, and ſhe came regularly to the place where I us'd to ſtand. Her converſation was always prudent and mo-

deſt, and ſhe made me often repeat my ſtory, and took a pleaſure in hearing the moſt minute particulars of it. The circumſtance ſhe liſten'd to with the greateſt pleaſure was, my long retirement in *Romney-Marſh*. She ask'd me whether I could again like to lead a ſolitary life, and whether the commerce I had ſince carried on with mankind had not depraved my mind. Sometimes ſhe would change the diſcourſe to the moſt ſublime ſubjects; and whether it were that ſhe was deſirous to examine my talents, or exerciſe her own, ſhe ſeem'd vaſtly pleaſed with thoſe exalted diſcourſes.

We had ſpent about two months in this manner, and the only conſolation ſhe hitherto had adminiſter'd to me was, her viſiting and converſing with me. She repeated from time to time the promiſe ſhe had made of aſſiſting me, but did not acquaint me in what manner. As I did not perceive the leaſt likelihood that my fortune would mend, I was far from feeding myſelf with empty hopes, and ſuppos'd I ſhould never receive any other favours from her than her good-will. However, when we were come pretty near St. *Helena*, ſhe put a queſtion to me which ſurpriz'd me very much:

You ſeem, ſays ſhe, to be prudent and virtuous, but then are you a man of ſpirit and reſolution? The buſineſs is now not only to ſave your life, but to make you inſtantly happy, beyond the utmoſt bounds of your wiſhes. I anſwer'd, that I would willingly attempt any thing to prevent my being carried to the iſland of *Nevis*. Liſten, ſays ſhe, to what I am now going to tell you: We are to caſt anchor before St. *Helena*: I will go aſhore, and be abſent three days; but in the night of the fourth I'll come and deliver you: You'll firſt ſee a large pleaſure-boat at ſome diſtance from the ſhip: There ſhall be a lanthorn in it by way of ſignal, which will alſo ſerve to guide you: A little after it ſhall be put out; but the difficulty will be to get you into the boat, for a conſtant watch is kept on board the ſhip all night, and much more ſtrictly now ſhe lies ſo near the ſhore. I have thought of ſeveral expedients to get you aſhore, but cannot think of any one that's feaſible. There would be too much danger were I to come near the ladders, beſides, they are drawn up in the night, and it would be impoſſible for you to let them down unperceived. I will throw myſelf, ſaid I, into the ſea;

you muſt only be near enough to take me in. 'Twas this very thing, ſays ſhe, I intended to propoſe to you, which yet I was afraid to do, tho' it muſt abſolutely be done. I will go towards that part where you will ſee the lanthorn, and in caſe you have courage enough to throw yourſelf into the waves, you may depend upon being taken up immediately. And if the watch ſhould happen to ſpy my boat, we will row off to ſuch a diſtance, that, as it will be in the dark, it will be impoſſible for them to purſue us to any purpoſe.

THIS appear'd to me not only feaſible but eaſy: The only thing to be dreaded was, leſt I ſhould be drown'd; but even that would have been a happineſs to me, if I had ſlipt this opportunity of making my eſcape. I gave the old gentlewoman ten thouſand thanks; and without once thinking what would become of me after I had got into the boat, I promis'd to put my life into her hands. We arriv'd at St. *Helena* a few days after, and caſt anchor. The paſſengers went on ſhore in the long-boat, and my guardian angel with them, and the captain alſo left the ſhip, with part of the crew; ſo that the company of miſerable wretches, of which

I was

was one, were left on board, with juſt men ſufficient to guard them, and prevent any tumult. I waited with the utmoſt impatience for the happy night which was to be the period of my life or the beginning of my liberty. 'Twas now come when the only uneaſineſs I felt was, that I had forgot to aſk my protectreſs how I was to be taken out of the ſea: However, this gave me but little pain; a man cannot be ſo very exact in examining the various methods of ſafety which are offer'd him, when he propoſes death to himſelf as his laſt refuge. I perceiv'd the lanthorn in the dead of night, and I ſaw it diſappear a moment after. I pretended to fall aſleep on that ſide of the ſhip which lay towards it, and not long after I heard the waves daſh under me. I ſuppos'd that this was made by the motion of the boat; but it being ſo dark that I could not ſee my hand, I was uncertain for a moment when to plunge into the ſea: Beſides, I was afraid of falling into the boat, in which caſe I ſhould certainly have beat myſelf to pieces, and three or four ſailors ſtanding juſt by me, I did not dare to ſpeak. However, having conſider'd that whatever might be their thoughts in hearing me ſay ſome few words, they yet would

would never imagine I was going to jump into the water, and very probably would not be near enough to hear me; I therefore put my head down, and cried out, Are you there, Madam? Yes, ſays ſhe, but I'm vex'd I did not conſider how dark it would be; obſerve whence you hear the voice, and throw yourſelf boldly into the ſea. The ſailors, who heard theſe words as plain as I did, roſe up. I don't know what their deſign was; however, hearing them come towards me, I call'd upon heaven to aſſiſt me, and flung myſelf into the waves.

My ſpirits being ſtrongly agitated by my plunging with ſo much violence, they bore me up ſo vigorouſly, that I did not once faint, tho' I drank large draughts of ſalt water. I was ſo ſenſible, that riſing again upon the ſurface, I heard ſeveral voices in the boat. However, as I could not ſwim, I ſhould certainly have been in danger, had not my deliverers provided an expedient I had never thought of, which at once ſav'd me. I was ſurprized, and even frighted to find myſelf above water, without knowing what it was that kept me up; and a moment after I found myſelf in the boat, in the arms of four men, who congratulated me

on

n my courage and ſucceſs. They then hought only of getting off as faſt as oſſible: Whilſt they were making all he ſail they could, and plying their oars with the utmoſt diligence, the old lady, who was at the head of this affair, diſco-er'd the greateſt joy for my deliverance. I firſt ask'd her how it was poſſible for me o be convey'd ſo ſuddenly into the boat. She anſwer'd, that after having conſulted with the four perſons whom ſhe had let into the deſign, and communicated to them the expedient we had thought upon, they conſider'd that a large fiſhing-net might be of ſervice to break my fall when I jumpt out of the ſhip; that having got cloſe to the ſhip with great difficulty, the night being very dark, they were afraid it would be impoſſible for me to ſee them; that however ſhe had aſſur'd them I waited for them, and that the ſmalleſt ſignal from them would be anſwer'd by me; that they thought it would be proper to ſpread the net as it was ſo dark; that they had fix'd a great part of it to the ſhip, and held the other part in their hands, when they row'd at a little diſtance, in order to catch me, in caſe I had the good fortune to fall into the water; that to keep the net from

breaking

breaking with my weight, they had let it down as low as the water, in order to break my fall; that they were thinking how to give me notice of their being come juſt as I ſpoke to them; that as I happen'd to fall in the net, the only trouble they then had was, to draw it to them as they row'd nearer the ſhip, by which means I was borne up in the midſt of the waves, and was afterwards taken into the boat.

THO' I thought myſelf greatly indebted to their ingenuity and care, 'tis manifeſt that my ſucceſs was owing immediately to providence, which I thank'd from the bottom of my ſoul. My companions lighted their lanthorn when we got at ſome diſtance from the ſhip; and judging that we were ſafe, they laid by their oars, and only us'd the ſail. The men came up to me, whom I hitherto had taken for common ſailors; but tho' they did not ſeem to be any better by their habit, their air and politeneſs ſeem'd to ſpeak them of a ſuperior rank. They ſurvey'd me attentively, and aſked me ſeveral queſtions, by which I found that the lady had acquainted them with part of my ſtory. They afterwards reflected upon my anſwers with an air of ſatisfaction. I did

not

ot underſtand the language they con-
ers'd in, but they ſpoke to me in very
roper *Engliſh*. At laſt, after making
e great promiſes of their friendſhip, one
f them ſaid to me, that he was ſurprized
had not yet been ſo curious as to en-
uire who they were, and whither they
ere going to carry me. I anſwer'd,
hat as they had reſcued me from the
noſt miſerable of all conditions, it was
ndifferent to me where I went: That
ith regard to them, I ſaid in the moſt
ivil terms, that I could not but have the
igheſt idea of their goodneſs, ſince they
ad done me ſo ſignal a piece of ſervice,
ithout being prompted to it from any
ther motives than thoſe of tenderneſs and
umanity. We hope, ſays the ſtranger,
hat you will not be long indifferent with
egard to the place whither we are now
going to carry you; 'twill prove ſo de-
ightful, that you will not deſire to re-
move from it; neither will you look up-
on your eſcape from the ſhip as your
greateſt happineſs, unleſs you give it that
name, as the means which heaven has
made uſe of to pave the way to that bleſ-
ſing it has in ſtore for you: We adviſe
you only, ſays he, to be prudent and
virtuous, and are perſuaded, from your

air

air and diſcourſe, and the particula
which Mrs. *Eliot* has told us, that yo
have always been, and will ever be ſo
leave to heaven and us the care of maki
you happy.

THEY talked to me upon this ſubje
the remaining part of the night, and all
did was, to thank them in general,
the moſt civil terms, for their great goo
neſs, but was unable to gueſs the meani
of what they had juſt hinted to me
ſuch obſcure terms. Mrs. *Eliot* (for th
was the name of my good friend, which
had never heard of before) was continuall
praiſing my modeſty and good natur
and telling them in what manner ſhe g
acquainted with me on board the ſhi
In a word, ſhe ſaid to them, I'm full
ſatisfied with the ſucceſs of my undert
king, and am perſuaded all my brethre
will be ſo. I have brought but a few
them, but they are to be valued rath
by weight than number; but all thi
was a riddle to me. Day now began t
break in upon us, and I diſcover'd, aft
we had ſail'd four or five hours, a ver
rocky coaſt, which I judg'd it would b
impoſſible for us to land upon. My de
liverers ſaid to me, you may now thank
heaven we are all ſafe. They ſeeme
however

owever to advance with great caution, r fear of running upon the rocks which ppear'd juſt above water. We came appily to ſhore: They drew the boat ut of the ſea, and drawing it along the nd, they hid it under an arch, which eemed to be made on purpoſe to ſhut it up. caſt my eyes on all ſides, to ſee which ay we ſhould get up into the country; or I did not perceive any path, and the ocks which lay round the ſhore were of uch a prodigious height that they ſeem'd nſurmountable. Mrs. *Eliot*, obſerving ny ſurprize, took me by the hand, and eading me a little way over the ſand a- ong the coaſt, ſhe carried me to an arch ike to that in which our companions had id their boat. We went into it: 'Twas kind of door, after which we came to an pening which reach'd from the bottom o the top of the rock, and winded about. t let in the light at top. We advanc'd or five or ſix minutes through theſe va- ious windings, but the way was ſo nar- ow we could ſcarce walk three abreaſt. You ſeem ſurpriz'd, ſays Mrs. *Eliot* to me, but have patience, and you'll be ſa- tisfied preſently. At laſt, the way we walk'd growing wider by degrees, we ſoon came to the mouth, which brought

us

us upon the main land: The proſpe
I then ſaw ſtruck me at once with adm
ration, when Mrs. *Eliot* carried me
an eminence, from whence I might tak
a more extenſive view of it. 'Twas
plain about five or ſix leagues long, an
about four leagues broad. It ſeemed
be ſurrounded with rocks like that
had gone through, and they were vaſt
craggy and ſteep, but not very high
The proſpect was thus bounded on
ſides, but then no ſpot in the wor
could be more beautiful. The whol
country look'd like an inchanted gar
den, for the embelliſhment of which bot
art and nature ſeem'd to have united the
endeavours. There one beheld viſto's
trees which extended out of ſight, ſma
woods, a beautiful mixture of meadow
and cultivated lands, houſes on each ſid
with exact ſymmetry, which ſeemed
built equally for conveniency and the de
light of the eye. In the midſt of th
plain was a vaſt edifice, which indeed
was not magnificent, but then 'twas
great ornament to the landſkip, it ap
pearing to be built in the center of the
reſt of the houſes, and conſequently was
equidiſtant from them. The ſun, which
now begun to diffuſe its rays, gave ſo
ſmiling

iling an air to every part of this rural ne, that I fancied myſelf convey'd into other world, and could not enough ſa- fy my eye. You ſee, ſays Mrs. *E-t*, our habitation and your own, and is is the happy ſpot heaven has in- lg'd you for your reſidence. I now, ys ſhe, again ſetting forward, will inform u with whom you are going to live, d what kind of happineſs you are to pect in this place.

You muſt undoubtedly have heard of e famous ſiege of *Rochelle*, and the dread- l calamities the citizens ſuffer'd. Moſt the perſons you will ſee here were once habitants of it. You know that a zeal r religion prompted us to take up arms. he ſeverity of the court, cardinal *Rich-eu*'s treachery, the violation of all our rivileges and rights which had been ranted us by the moſt ſolemn promiſes, ur miſeries and the injuſtice of our ty- nts, which increas'd daily, had brought s to the brink of deſpair. We reſolv'd o exert our ſelves to the utmoſt for the ake of our religion and liberties; but ur defence and endeavours were more uſt than ſucceſsful, and ended with the ntire loſs of all the advantages, for the reſervation whereof we had taken up arms.

arms. After having ſtood out a long ſiege, which will be for ever memorable becauſe of the terrible circumſtances with which it was attended, famine forced us to yield. Our conquerors triumph'd with ſo much barbarity over us, that we could not bear the pride with which they inſulted our miſeries; upon which, about fourſcore of the moſt rich and diſtinguiſh'd citizens met together: we then held a council about our misfortunes, and concluding that it would be impoſſible for us to be more wretched, we determin'd to abandon our unhappy country, and to ſeek out ſome place where we might at leaſt be allow'd to live, and ſerve God in our own way. We firſt thought of retiring into *England*, for moſt of us had ſome acquaintance there, not to mention that ſeveral of us could ſpeak *Engliſh*, the *Rochellers* obliging moſt of their children to learn it for the convenience of traffick. Immediately we pack'd up our moſt valuable things, and having agreed upon a place in *London* where we ſhould all meet, we divided our ſelves into ſeveral little companies, in order to leave *France*, as opportunity might offer. Heaven was ſo propitious to our deſigns, that we all met in *London* in leſs than ſix

weeks

eks after. Immediately the principal ſons among us preſented a petition to king, by which we humbly begg'd to indulg'd the liberty ofour own worſhip, d of being allow'd a church. Their tition did not meet with the ſucceſs y expected, for *England* was almoſt as ich troubled upon the account of reli- on as *France*. There were two parties ho tore one another to pieces by the odi- s diſtinction of presbyterians and thoſe r epiſcopal government; or rather, the chbiſhop of *Canterbury*, jealous of his thority, and that of the reſt of the bi- ops, perſecuted all thoſe unmercifully ho adhered to the principles of reforma- on eſtabliſhed in *France*. He had got ch an aſcendant over king *Charles*'s mind- at this prince entruſted the government f all ſpiritual matters to him; and he rew daily more bitter againſt ſuch as ere enemies to the hierarchy. We were old, that a great number of preſbyteri- ns, wearied out with perſecution, had bandon'd their country in the ſame man- er as we had done; and that ſome were one to *Holland*, but the greateſt part to *America*. The archbiſhop hating us as uch as he did them, the king, at his equeſt, rejected our petition, and urged

us

us to join in worſhip with the church of *England*, but not one among us was diſpoſed to acquieſce in this. We had been ſo ſhort a time in *London*, that there was nothing cou'd induce us to ſtay in it, whereupon we agreed in concert to venture once more upon the ſeas, and to ſeek for an aſylum in ſome other country. Some *Engliſh* preſbyterians hearing of our deſign, offer'd to carry off all their effects, and to ſeek their fortunes with us; accordingly we bought a ſhip between us, and being unanimouſly reſolv'd to ſail for *America*, we freighted with whatever we thought might be neceſſary for the colony we intended to found.

We were not above two hundred in all, children and ſervants included. Our voyage was very happy for the firſt ſix weeks; I may even ſay that it was ſo entirely, ſince the unhappy accident that befel us brought us to the felicity we now enjoy. The wind, which had been favourable for above a month, chopp'd about on a ſudden, and blew ſo ſtrong that the ſailors told us we were to expect a ſtorm. Figure then to your ſelf the diſtraction with which the women and children were ſeiz'd, of whom half our crew was compoſed. We expected to be certainly buried in the waves;

nd indeed, our ſhip was toſs'd about in dreadful a manner for ſome days, that e could not but give our ſelves over for oſt, but a hard gale of wind threw us on the baſt of this iſland, where our veſſel run pon the rocks. But by a miracle of pro-idence, the tide, which was going down t that inſtant, left us in ſuch a manner pon the ſtrand, that inſtead of being rown'd by the water, which ruſh'd in-o the ſhip, we ſaw it run out of it elf thro' the leaks which the points of he rocks had made in it; by which neans we eaſily got out of her, and ame up in the ſand. And now all hands were employ'd in unloading the moſt aluable part of our cargo; but we need ot have put ourſelves to this uſeleſs trou-ble, had we conſider'd that the veſſel was drove ſo far up the ſtrand that it was mpoſſible for the ſtrongeſt waves to car-y her back again, and that the cargo would have fix'd her down more firmly. Be this as it will, the return of the tide did not do us the leaſt prejudice; ſo that we ſaved not only our cargo, but the ſhip it ſelf, and all the pieces of the wreck.

'TWAS nevertheleſs a melancholy ſight to ſee all our trunks and other things ly-

ing confuſedly upon the ſand along the rocks, and we and our children ſitting upon them, waiting for the reſolution our huſbands ſhould take. As the coaſt was craggy, they were obliged to ſend out a few of their company, in order to trace it, till ſuch time as they ſhould meet with a path, by which we might get up into the country. They brought us but a melancholy account at their return; they told us that the rocks were alike craggy for half a mile, and that they could not poſſibly advance any farther, becauſe the ſea came up cloſe to the coaſt. Thus were we confin'd in a ſmall bank of ſand, ſurrounded on one ſide by the ſea, and with inacceſſible mountains on the other: ſo that there now remain'd only two expedients to which our huſbands could have recourſe. The one was, to invent ſome way by which we might climb the rocks; but then, had they themſelves been able to do ſo, we and our children muſt have ſtaid behind. The other was, to take the long-boat, at the hazard of running every inſtant upon the ſharp black rocks, which appear'd every where upon the ſurface of the water, to ſearch round the iſland for ſome place for us to live in. They were going to attempt the latter, when

hen heaven pointed out to one of our *ngliſhmen* the narrow paſſage you juſt ow came through. He firſt went up lone, as far as the opening to the plain, hen returning back immediately, he old us, in the utmoſt tranſports of joy, he happy diſcovery he had made. We ook'd upon him as our preſerver; and his ſervice afterwards entitled him to be ne of the firſt rank in our colony. We ame into the plain, as into a kind of *romiſed land*; and the firſt thing our eople did was to trace the extent of it. At their coming back they told us with ſtoniſhment, that we were hemm'd in all round; and that after having examin'd it with the ſtricteſt care they had not been able to find one out-let in the vaſt chain of rocks which ſurround it. Moſt of the women began to lament at our being excluded from all correſpondence with the reſt of the world; but when our huſbands aſſur'd us, that it ſeem'd to be a very fine ſoil, and that they had found a thouſand kinds of fruits, which the earth yielded ſpontaneouſly, we changed our opinion, and began to think that heaven itſelf muſt have conducted our ſteps to a place ſo proper for us to ſettle in; and our happy condition has ſince confirm'd

us in the good opinion we then entertain'd
You may judge how dear our ſolitud
is to us, by the labour we have employ'd
to embelliſh it; nature aſſiſts us in it
and indeed there is no part of the worl
where ſhe is more indulgent. During th
many years we have been ſettled here, w
have enjoy'd the bleſſing of a perpetua
ſpring, which at the ſame time is alway
improv'd with the abundance of au-
tumn.

I SHALL not now, ſays Mrs. *Eliot*, take
notice of the order we eſtabliſh'd, afte
we had taken poſſeſſion of this happy
place; but will leave you the pleaſure
of ſeeing it your ſelf. All that now re-
mains for me to tell you, is the motive
of my going to *England*, and that which
prompted me afterwards to offer you my
ſervice when we were on board together;
this is an article I cannot poſſibly omit.
This country, ſays ſhe, notwithſtanding
it is indulged with ſo many bleſſings both
by heaven and nature, has nevertheleſs
ſome noxious quality either in the air or
the ſoil, which prevents our colony from
increaſing. I cannot ſay that our women
are barren; ſo far from it that moſt of
them are very prolific, but then they
bring nothing but girls into the world.

Within

Within theſe twenty years laſt paſt there have been born four females to one male child. 'Tis true indeed, that the females are amiable creatures, and one wou'd imagine that nature, in creating them, had employ'd all her graces and charms. But you will naturally ſuppoſe, that as moſt of them cannot meet with huſbands, they conſequently muſt lead very melancholy lives, to our no ſmall regret. The poor girls do nothing but ſigh continually; ſo that 'tis but too plain ſomething is wanting to make them happy. We might indeed get them huſbands from St. *Helena*, but this we don't think proper, for two reaſons; the firſt is, from our diſinclination to introduce men among us of a different perſuaſion from our ſelves; the ſecond is, the deſire we have to conceal our ſelves ſo long as we can from the reſt of the world. We are vaſtly well pleas'd with our ſolitude, and our being ſequeſtred from mankind. We therefore thought, after mature deliberation, that the beſt way to prevent the ruin of our colony, would be to get young huſbands from *France* and *England* for our daughters; and I was commiſſioned to do this, our people making me the compliment to ſay that I have the moſt inſinuating tongue.

I ſet out from our iſland about fifteen months ago, with one of our men who was nominated to go along with me. I went firſt to *France*, where I viſited all thoſe cities in which our religion flouriſhes; but tho' I was very aſſiduous, I met with few young people willing to go with me, upon my bare promiſes; in ſhort, I found but two for my purpoſe in *France*, and three in *England*. I might indeed very poſſibly have brought a greater number, had I been willing to receive them without diſtinction; but I wanted a ſet of prudent, religious, virtuous, good-temper'd young men; and God knows we meet with few ſuch in *Europe!* I ſaw you in the ſhip, your countenance pleas'd me, and you no ſooner diſcover'd your ill fortune and your inclinations to me, but I thought you a fit perſon for my deſign. You may have taken notice of the reſt who were on board with me, tho' you did not know the motive of our voyage. They came aſhore about three days ſince, along with me, are here expecting you, and are equally impatient with the reſt of the colony to ſee you.

Mrs. *Eliot*, having now ended her diſcourſe, aſk'd me whether I did not approve of the fortune ſhe had allotted me; and

and whether I was not oblig'd to her for reſcuing me from ſlavery, in order to put me into the arms of a pretty woman, and incorporate me in a ſociety of people ſo amiable and virtuous. I was ſo overjoy'd at what ſhe told me, that I could ſcarce believe it to be true; and therefore aſked her a thouſand queſtions, all which ſhe anſwer'd in the moſt ingenuous manner. There was only one thing ſhe refus'd to ſatisfy me in, and that was my ſurprize to think how it were poſſible for their colony to be conceal'd from all the world, when St. *Helena* lay ſo near that one could get to it in five or ſix hours. I alſo aſked her how ſhe could find the way either to or from St. *Helena*. This, ſays ſhe, is a ſecret you muſt not enquire into, till ſuch time as we ſhall think proper to diſcover it; but a circumſtance which ought to make you leſs anxious upon that account is, that a few of the oldeſt people only are acquainted with it. Hearing her ſay this, I thought 'twould not be prudent to aſk any more queſtions, and was perſuaded that the ſole reaſon why ſhe refus'd to gratify me in this particular was, in order that I might not be able to leave the iſland in caſe I ſhould grow weary of it. We walk'd

forward, and when the four men who had ſtaid behind to take care of the boat were come up to us again, we made greater haſte, and about an hour after got into Mrs. *Eliot*'s houſe.

'Twas very neat and commodious, and tho' 'twas furniſhed in the plaineſt manner, yet every thing ſeem'd to ſpeak abundance. You may, ſays ſhe, form an idea of the reſt of the houſes from mine, for they are exactly like it. The reaſon of their being built alike was, in order to prevent any jealouſy from ariſing among us. We all live here in a perfect equality, by which means we have left no room for ambition. Precedency is here regulated by ſeniority, and few are jealous of it when old age only entitles them to it. She afterwards called her ſervants to change my cloaths: She had brought a ſuit for me in the boat, which I put on at my coming aſhore; but ſhe would have me cloath'd in a better dreſs, in order to appear in public, eſpecially as I was to be ſeen by ſo many young women, one of whom I was to make choice of for a wife. God forbid, ſays ſhe, that I ſhould ever inſpire you with a love for that empty ornament, fine cloaths; but on this occaſion 'tis lawful

to

o adorn, in a modeſt manner, the ad-vantages you may have received from nature; 'tis even a mark of reſpect which we owe to virtuous perſons when we are to appear before them. Saying this, ſhe obliged me to put on a plain ſuit of cloaths, that had been made for me, and which fitted me very well. Obſerving this dreſs, and that of the ſervants walk-ing with us, I could not forbear asking what ſhe meant by the equality ſhe told me was obſerved in the colony. I ſup-poſe, ſaid I, you don't look upon your taylors and ſervants as your equals. No, ſays ſhe, we have not chang'd the order of ranks and conditions, and ſuch as were ſervants at our leaving *Europe*, are ſtill upon the ſame foot, and their children alſo; but then they nevertheleſs are upon a kind of level with us, which I will now explain to you: Firſt, they ſhare equally with us in all our poſſeſſions, which are in common, as you'll know better after-wards. Notwithſtanding that my ſervants eat at a table by themſelves, they feed upon the very ſame diet, and they are allowed the greateſt plenty of all neceſſaries. Se-condly, any maſter or miſtreſs who treat their ſervants ill, are puniſh'd ſeverely for it. Have not they as much right to re-

fuſe being puniſh'd by us, as we to uſe them unkindly? With regard to their rank, 'tis immediately after that of our children, and they obſerve the ſame order among themſelves as we do. Thus, as one cannot ſay there is any inequality between a father and a ſon, there is very little more between us and our ſervants. Every family is conſider'd as an entire body of which the father is the chief, the children are the next, and after them the ſervants. They are as nearly related to us as the hands are to the body, and we conſider ourſelves ſuperior to them no otherwiſe than as the head is with regard to the reſt of the body.

I APPROV'D very much theſe prudent regulations, ſo conformable to the dictates of religion and humanity. Whilſt I was diſcourſing with Mrs. *Eliot*, the four men who had left us at our coming into the houſe, ſpread the news of my arrival, a little after which a great number of perſons of both ſexes came and congratulated me on my arrival in the civileſt manner. Moſt of them were advanced in years, but a fluſh of health which appear'd in their countenances, and the freſhneſs of their complexions, denoted at one and the ſame time the excellency

cellency of their climate, and the ſobriety of their lives. I diſcover'd ſome regret at their not having given me an opportunity of viſiting them firſt, when one of the old men anſwer'd, We have baniſh'd all modiſh reſtraints and idle compliments; we are better pleas'd that we came to ſee you firſt, as we think 'tis giving you a pledge of our friendſhip, than you would have been to prevent us in it, becauſe you would thereby have given us a mark of honour and reſpect: The advantage is conſequently on our ſide, and therefore you ought not to regret it: Ought not all men to conduct themſelves in this manner with regard to their fellow-creatures? You'll find by that time you know us better, that we put a much higher value on mutual charity and real affection, than on all the outward grimaces which men have complimented with the name of civility.

I MUST confeſs, that in hearing them argue after this manner, methought I was ſo far from being got among proteſtants, that they ſeemed rather a community of quakers, who condemn the ordinary cuſtoms of mankind, and whoſe way of life is entirely different from that of the reſt of the world: However, the more

I talk'd with them the more their converſation pleas'd me, and I even perceiv'd, that as they abhorr'd the ſpecious appearances of politeneſs, ſo they had the eſſence of it, I mean the utmoſt cordiality and complacency. They acquainted me with the laws to which they were all ſubject, their cuſtoms and employments, and promiſed to do all that lay in their power to make my days happy among them. In this manner I was viſited the firſt day of my arrival by a great part of the colony. Their number, which was at firſt about two hundred, as was before obſerved, was now almoſt doubled, and would have been much greater, could they have got husbands for all their daughters, and this was their greateſt pain. I obſerv'd that they were not ſatisfied with Mrs. *Eliot*'s voyage; they could not have imagin'd but ſhe would have brought them more than ſix men, when they were near an hundred women among them who wanted huſbands, and thereupon told me that they muſt be oblig'd to take ſome new reſolution on that head.

AFTER having ſpent the day in the congratulations they made me upon my arrival, and other teſtimonies of their friendſhip, I told Mrs. *Eliot* in the even-

ing

g that I ſhould be very glad to have
r explain herſelf, about the wife ſhe in-
nded to provide for me: I hear, ſaid I,
ou have near an hundred marriageable
omen, now how can you pretend to pro-
ide for them all, ſince you have brought
ut ſix of the other ſex? She anſwer'd,
hat it had been reſolv'd the young wo-
nen ſhould caſt lots, in order that no
ne might have room to complain of her
eing poſtpon'd, we being determin'd
ever to do any thing that may give
oom to pre-eminences or diſtinctions. I
as very much ſhock'd at this anſwer,
eing very unwilling to take up with any
ife that chance ſhould allot me: My
eart requir'd that I ſhould be permitted
o chuſe, and I began to fear that I ſhould
ot meet with the happineſs they had flat-
er'd me with, in caſe I ſhould be forc'd
o live with a woman I could not love.
My fear was ſo much the more juſt, as
I had been told that their women were the
moſt charming creatures in the world:
'Tis ſcarce poſſible they ſhould all be ſo,
and what a chance ſhall I ſtand, in caſe
fate ſhould allot me a diſagreable woman?
How afflicting muſt it be to me to be
thus unhappily wedded, when I ſhould
have continually before my eyes ſo many
beautiful

beautiful objects as they are repreſented to me? I withdrew in the evening, full of thoſe thoughts, and was diſturb'd with them all night long.

THE next morning, as ſoon as I awak'd, I had the pleaſure of ſeeing all the five young men who came in the ſame veſſel with me. They had been carried the day before to the other end of the plain, that they might view the ſeveral parts of it, by which means they had heard nothing of my arrival. We embrac'd one another with a tenderneſs which is reciprocally felt by perſons who have one common deſtiny; but when, after about a quarter of an hour's converſation, we began to be a little acquainted, and to open ourſelves to one another without the leaſt reſerve, they did not conceal from me, that notwithſtanding the many pleaſures they taſted in this agreable place, they nevertheleſs had the ſame reluctance with myſelf, to take any woman at random, as chance ſhould pleaſe to determine. We, ſays one of them, came firſt aſhore, and therefore have a right to chuſe firſt, that is to ſay, ſaid he with ſome warmth, that in caſe fortune does not favour us, ſome new-comer will carry off the prettieſt woman of the iſland

before

before our faces. My dear friends, if I may adviſe, you'll never ſuffer this; the perſon who ſpoke with ſo much vivacity was a *Frenchman*. I anſwer'd that I approv'd his reſentments, but that I did not ſee any poſſibility of prevailing with the old men to think as we did. I'm ſure, ſays he, I'll defy them ever to prevail with me to conſider this in the ſame light as they do, nor ſhall they ever force me to marry a woman for whom I have no inclination; ſaying which, he urg'd us to join with him in repreſenting to the old men the injuſtice of their conduct in this article. I refus'd abſolutely to ſubſcribe to their reſolution, not that I had leſs averſion than they to marry after this manner, but was unwilling to interrupt the tranquillity which reign'd in this place; I therefore advis'd him not to diſcover his reſentments till ſuch time as we knew whether fortune would declare againſt us. He and his companions told me they had been aſſur'd a little before, that the lots were to be caſt that afternoon, at the deſire of ſeveral young women, who were extremely impatient to know their fate: They had been confin'd to their houſes ever ſince our arrival, and this precaution of keeping them from

the

the ſight of us, increas'd their curioſity. Mrs. *Eliot* came and told me that I was to be married that evening. I now ask'd her whether ſhe had any daughters: She anſwer'd that ſhe had two, and wiſh'd heartily that one of them might be ſo happy as to fall to my lot. I ſpent part of the morning in viſiting ſome of the old people of the colony, who ſhew'd me every thing that was remarkable in the plain, and carried me to the large edifice before-mention'd. I at firſt took it for a church, but they inform'd me 'twas a common ſtorehouſe, where all the riches of the iſland were depoſited, and explained the whole to me in the manner following.

We on all occaſions conſider ourſelves, ſays one of them to me, as one people or a ſingle family; we all lead a calm and unruffled life, as ſo many children in their father's houſe. Every year we chuſe four governors by lot, whoſe office is to ſuperintend continually the public utility. Their private duty is to oblige our ſervants to cultivate our lands, to carry the product of our harveſts into the ſtorehouſe, and after to diſtribute it among us, which is done in an equal proportion, according to the number of perſons who inhabit each

ach houſe: A ſervant has as great a por-ion as his maſter. We did not at firſt njoy the abundance we now do. When ve came from *Europe* we had a great eal of ready money, and a conſiderable uantity of proviſions and tools; but our money was of no ſervice here; our pro-viſions might ſubſiſt us for a certain ime, but we were in want of corn to ow our lands, and horſes to plough with, nd it was proper for us to make provi-ion for time to come. Our ſhip was aſh'd to pieces againſt the rocks, and we had only our long-boat; how then could we venture ourſelves on unknown ſeas, in which were innumerable rocks? But whither could we fly? which way? upon what hopes? However, there was n *Engliſhman* among us who offer'd to hazard his life for the public good: 'Twas he who ſo happily diſcover'd the cleft of the rock, of which I know Mrs. *Eliot* has given you an account. The brave *Engliſhman* above mention'd would not ſuffer any one to accompany him in his enterprize, when he put a good quan-tity of proviſions in the long-boa', and ſet out with only a little ſail and a couple of oars. The whole colony pray'd during his abſence that he might meet with ſuc-ceſs,

ceſs, eſpecially as our preſervation had ſo great a dependance upon it. Two days after his departure ſome of our young people who were walking upon the ſhore, ſaw him advancing towards it, and immediately came and told us the joyful news, when we all ran to the coaſt. 'Twas he himſelf, who brought back his boat loaded with corn, and ſeeds of ſeveral kinds which we wanted. Every one was very urgent to know the circumſtances of his voyage, but being as prudent as courageous, he refus'd to explain himſelf in public. The moſt conſiderable perſons of our colony, among whom I was nominated, met together, in order to hear his relation, when he told us ſuch particulars as raiſed our admiration. We thought proper, purſuant to his advice, to conceal part of it, for the ſake of the colony; but at the ſame time we divulg'd ſuch particulars as were neceſſary to be diſcover'd for the conſolation of our people in general. 'Twas publickly told that he had been at St. *Helena*, that we lay at a little diſtance from it, and were ſure of getting from thence whatever we might want in time to come. The name of our generous companion was *Drington*. He died a few years ago; but before he died

lied he did the colony a thouſand other mportant ſervices, which claim the gra- itude of our lateſt poſterity.

OUR plain made quite another figure ome time after his return: Every one fell o cultivating the ground with all imagin- ble diligence, ſo that in about ſix months ve had built our houſe and till'd our ands. We, under heaven, gave our plain the ſmiling aſpect it now wears; nd looking upon ourſelves as the foun- lers of a new ſtate, we were not more ex- cited by the conſideration that we were labouring for ourſelves, than by the de- ſire of giving our poſterity an advanta- geous idea of our care and induſtry. Mr. *Drington* was employ'd in going fre- quently to St. *Helena*, and in bringing from thence whatever neceſſaries we might want. We appointed three of our companions to aſſiſt him in his voyages, who bound themſelves by an oath not to diſcover any of thoſe particulars we had thought proper to conceal from the co- lony, which method has always been ob- ſerved ſince Mr. *Drington*'s deceaſe. There are but four men among us, who are all ſworn, that are impower'd to go to ſea, and when any one of theſe die, another is elected. Thoſe have the ſole command

command over the boats, which they keep chain'd up in a grotto you may have obſerv'd at your arrival. They ſeldom go for St. *Helena* now, we being in no want of any aſſiſtance; for our lands yield more than we have occaſion for. Our flocks are ſo much increas'd that they are ſometimes a burden to us. We might indeed ſell part of them to the inhabitants of St. *Helena*, but what ſhould we do with the money? That which we brought from *Europe* is here placed among our uſeleſs treaſure; we have lodged it by conſent in our ſtore-houſe, and look upon it as an inſignificant dead part of our poſſeſſions, of which we cannot make any uſe. Thus, of the three principal paſſions which infeſt the heart of man, we have found out the art of ſuppreſſing two of them: The equality which is eſtabliſh'd among us ſecures us from ambition, and the uſeleſſneſs of riches has cur'd us of avarice. Love is the only paſſion for which we cannot find a remedy. Our young girls pine away, and it is a moſt melancholy circumſtance that we can neither root out this paſſion from their hearts, nor eaſe them of their pain. I myſelf, added the good old man, know but too well how difficult

ult it is at a certain age to curb one's eſires, or reſiſt human nature.

AFTER he had ended, I put two queſ-ons to him. I eaſily conceive, ſaid I, hat 'tis no difficult matter for you to inder the inhabitants from going to ſea your boats, and ſatisfying their curio-ty, but how is it poſſible for you to onceal your abode from the iſlanders of t. *Helena*, ſince they lie ſo near you? And what judgment can they form of the our men you ſometimes ſend to them, hen they ſee them arrive at ſo great a iſtance from the continent, in a boat, n which they may naturally imagine they id not croſs that great expanſe of wa-ers? The old man anſwer'd, that the firſt ime the inhabitants of St. *Helena* ſaw Mr. *Drington* arrive, they look'd upon im as one come from the clouds; and were very urgent to know whence he ame, and what accident had brought im into their iſland; but that this pru-dent *Engliſhman* having conſider'd what advantage it would be to the colony not to be diſcover'd, even by their neighbours, he had made them ſuch ambiguous an-ſwers, that they cou'd get nothing to the purpoſe out of him; that his companions had been as prudent; and the better to divert

divert the curioſity of the *Portugueze* and ſome *Engliſh* who are ſettled in St *Helena*, they never ſail from their harbour till duſk, thereby to prevent them from making any diſcoveries. They are perſuaded, ſays the old man, that we don't live far from them; but tho' they make the ſtricteſt ſearch, they will, I believe, ſcarce ever be able to find us out; and nothing but chance, or the indiſcretion of our four mariners, can ever inform them of it. My ſecond queſtion was the ſame I had before made to Mrs. *Eliot*. What benefit, ſaid I, d'ye think your daughters can reap from mine and my companions arrival? There cannot be above ſix of them obliged, and the reſt will be but the more afflicted to find themſelves rejected by the caprice of fortune. He agreed that I was in the right, and made heavy complaints againſt Mrs. *Eliot* for ſucceeding ſo ill in her commiſſion. However, ſays he, we have this day taken a reſolution in the aſſembly which will give them ſome conſolation; which is, to ſend again to *Europe*, and, if poſſible, prevail on a ſufficient number of young men to tranſport themſelves to our iſland. In caſe this ſcheme ſhou'd not ſucceed, we'll permit our daughters to

go

o (beſtowing on each of them a hand-
me fortune) to any part of the world
ey themſelves ſhall like beſt.

THE old man was not very prudent in
equainting me with this laſt circum-
ance, and indeed he did not ſee into the
onſequences of it. The reflections which
en ſuggeſted themſelves, made me think
e deſign they had of beſtowing wives
n us by lot, more unjuſt than ever. I
ou'd not forbear diſcovering this to my
ve companions; and I had no occaſion
o add any thing farther to make them
nſible how afflicting it muſt be for us
o ſee all the pretty women leave the
land, whilſt we, perhaps, ſhould be
ound for life to the moſt diſagreeable of
hem. Mr. *Gelin*, a young *Frenchman*
f wit and merit, but whoſe vivacity
eem'd to have the aſcendant over his pru-
ence on this occaſion, mov'd, that we
hould immediately complain to the prin-
ipal old men, and declare that we would
ever ſubmit to a law ſo unjuſt with re-
gard to ourſelves. He won over our com-
panions to his opinion; ſo that as no one
ppos'd this reſolution but my ſelf, I was
blig'd to uſe a thouſand arguments, be-
ore I cou'd make them agree with me
hat we need not yet carry matters ſo far;

and that in honour, as well as for the ſak
of peace, we ſhould ſuſpend our com
plaints till ſuch time as they ſhould at
tempt to force us. 'Tis not, ſaid I, th
ſame as if we had already contracted a
intimacy with ſome amiable objects, whic
they would oblige us to break; for w
are not yet acquainted with any of th
young women we are to ſee by and by
We have not yet conceiv'd a particular paſ
ſion for any, and all we deſire in general
to be married to a pretty woman; poſſibl
chance may favour us; in which caſe w
ſhould not only have the pleaſure of ſee
ing our deſires gratify'd, but the ſatiſ
faction of having given the whole colony
a proof of our wiſdom. But if on th
contrary, fortune ſhou'd not be propi
tious to us, we ſhall then have the greate
liberty of complaining, and our remon
ſtrances muſt have the greater weight with
them, after ſo ample a teſtimony of our
modeſty and ſubmiſſion. We may firſt
requeſt our marriage may be delay'd on
pretence that we deſire to be a little ac
quainted with our deſtin'd brides; this
favour can never be refuſed us; and we'll
thence take advantage of breaking off in
a civil way, if poſſible, from the invo
luntary engagements which they wou'd

blige us to ſubmit to. Theſe arguments ade ſo much impreſſion on Mr. *Gelin* to make him change his reſolution. t our ſeparating we embraced one an-her like brethren, and promis'd to af-rd reciprocally all thoſe aſſiſtances which ight forward the ſucceſs of our mutual opes.

THE time appointed for the ceremony eing come, one of the old men came r me to Mrs. *Eliot*'s, where I continued reſide. He told me that the election as to be in the church, and that all the oung women were aſſembled in it. I ot there almoſt at the ſame time with y companions, to whom ſeveral old en had been ſent. Curioſity had brought ogether all the inhabitants of the iſland, n order to be ſpectators upon ſo extraor-inary an occaſion. We made our way n thro' the crowd; but care had been aken to leave an area clear, in which all he maidens were ranged in a circle. A able ſtood in the middle, at which the miniſter was ſeated, and the four govern-urs of the ſtore-houſe on each ſide of im, when we were order'd to go up to hem. All the ſpectators kept a profound ilence, and ſeem'd to wait with the ut-moſt impatience for the opening of this

ſingular ceremony, which begun by
ſhort prayer, in which they begg'd
heaven to bleſs us. Afterwards the mi
niſter, addreſſing himſelf to us with
loud voice, made a very eloquent diſcour
on the ſubject of our meeting. He to
us in few words the hiſtory of the colony
and the particular marks of protectio
which heaven had indulged it durin
twenty years. He gave us a ſhort expo
ſition of the laws of the country, and th
ſeveral engagements by which we were
going to bind ourſelves, at the ſame
time that we were incorporating ourſelve
with the inhabitants of the iſland. Th
laws ſeem'd to be drawn up with grea
ſimplicity, and not difficult to be obey'd
They conſiſted of a ſmall number of clea
and immediate conſequences, and general
precepts of juſtice and charity. He con-
gratulated us on our having been choſe
by providence to ſhare the bleſſings o
that happy iſland; and exhorted us to
make our ſelves worthy of the ſociety
whereof we are now becoming members.
Notwithſtanding that all the young wo-
men, from among whom they were go-
ing to chuſe us wives, had been educated
in the principles of virtue and integrity,
he ſaid he did not doubt but that God,
whoſe

whoſe hand directs chance, would allot to each of us that woman, whoſe temper and qualities ſhould beſt ſuit our inclinations. 'Tis for this reaſon, ſays he, as much as to avoid the jealouſy which preference creates, that we are determin'd to give you wives by lot; being firmly perſuaded, that whatever men call by that name is in reality a ſecret diſpoſition of heaven, which always turns events to the advantage of thoſe who reverence his holy will.

AT the ſame time that my ears liſtned to this diſcourſe, my eyes were employ'd on a very different ſubject. 'Twas not natural I ſhould come into a company of young virgins, who indeed were all charming creatures, without at leaſt taking notice of their air and countenance; my eyes wandred from one to another, and my admiration was ſo much divided, that had I been left to my choice, it wou'd have been very difficult for me to determine; and therefore was not ſorry that chance was to decide it. In what manner ſoever, ſaid I, it ſhall happen, 'tis impoſſible but I muſt be ſatisfied with it. I ſhould be in too great a dilemma, were I left to chuſe in ſuch a crowd of beauties, and am very glad that trouble is ſpar'd me. Such was the ſituation of my

mind for a few moments. Mere admira-
tion is a calm and diſintereſted ſenſation;
I was not as yet ſenſible to any other, but
a glance ſoon gave me a ſtronger idea of
it. As my eyes were running a ſecond
time over this circle of beauties, I ob-
ſerv'd one whoſe glances were directed to
me, but the moment mine met hers, ſhe
fix'd them on the ground. This was a
random look, and I did not immediately
perceive there was any thing more parti-
cular in my curioſity, than in that which
had prompted me to contemplate the reſt;
nevertheleſs, my glances ſeem'd to be fix'd
on one object; I ran over, with a kind
of greedineſs, all the features of a face
which ſeem'd to have eſcap'd me the firſt
time. The ſhape, the air, the leaſt mo-
tion of this lovely perſon ſeem'd to com-
mand my whole attention. Yet would
ſhe every now and then lift up her eyes to
look upon me, when perceiving that I
ſtill kept mine fixed upon her, ſhe at
length bluſhed, and caſt her eyes down-
wards; at the ſame time I felt a glow dif-
fuſe itſelf over my cheeks; and this change
having recall'd me from my abſence of
thought, ſuch emotions were raiſed with-
in me, that I don't remember my breaſt
ever felt ſuch tumults before. I recover'd

ny ſelf, and ſeem'd to liſten to the mi-niſter's diſcourſe, but was inceſſantly di-verted from it by a ſecret impulſe, which all'd me back to the lovely object. I id not any longer find thoſe charms in he reſt of the maidens which I had ad-mir'd in them before; their air appear'd o me affected; I read in their eyes the trong deſires they had to be married, nd the dread they were under leſt for-une ſhould prove their enemy; whereas he who had made this conqueſt over my eart breathed nothing but innocence and modeſty. I muſt confeſs, I then began to think of the advice I had given Mr. *Gelin*, and wiſh'd to have a minute's diſ-courſe with him, in order to make him change his former reſolutions. Cupid caus'd me inſtantaneouſly to feel, that he had made my happineſs depend on the beautiful object he then preſented to me; and that I was not to expect it either from chance or my own choice.

WHILST I was revolving theſe diffe-rent thoughts, the miniſter, having end-ed his diſcourſe, declared the order which was to be obſerv'd in the election. Of two methods which might be uſed, ſays he to the aſſembly, the one of making all the young women draw together; and

the other, of dividing them into ſix bands, anſwerable to the number of young people; the laſt appears to me the moſt natural, and will, I believe, be beſt approv'd. Every band ſhall conſiſt of nine maidens; chance ſhall decide which band every young man ſhall belong to; and they ſhall afterwards draw, in order to ſee who that happy perſon ſhall be whom heaven ſhall pleaſe to favour with that diſtinction. This method was univerſally applauded. The girls were very well pleas'd with it; and indeed, there ſeem'd to be a nearer proportion between ſixteen to one, than between fourſcore and ſixteen and ſix; and this reduction ſeem'd to bring their hopes to near the ſame level. They were preſently divided into bands; our ſix names were writ on ſo many pieces of paper, and a girl was called from each band to draw them out of a baſket in which the miniſter had put them. Then a confuſed ſound was heard in the whole aſſembly, which denoted the impatience they had to ſee how chance wou'd determine. As for my ſelf, who was excited by emotions different from curioſity, I trembled as I ſaw the girls put their hands into the baſket. My fate was going to be decided at once; for in caſe chance ſhou'd remove

me

ne from the band in which my lovely harmer was, all hopes wou'd inſtantly vaniſh. My paſſion was already grown o that height, that the fear of my not ucceeding rais'd a thouſand tortures in my boſom. At laſt the lots were drawn, nd I had the unhappineſs to ſee my ſelf diſpoſed of in the manner I had dreaded. I offer'd up my complaints inwardly to heaven; but what words can expreſs their bitterneſs! ſcarce could I refrain from burſting into tears. I ſuffer'd my ſelf to be led, without once opening my lips, to the band to which I now belong'd; my eyes only expreſs'd my grief to the amiable creature I was forced to abandon; and I perceiv'd by her looks that ſhe had taken notice of my grief, and gueſs'd the cauſe of it. I was perpetually turning back, and gazing upon her as I was going away; and to heighten my anguiſh, I imagined her languiſhing air told me, that ſhe was as much afflicted at our ſeparation as I could be.

I WAS now incapable of attending to the reſt of the ceremony; but obſerving that fortune had thrown *Gelin* into the next band to mine, I went up to him to put him in mind of the promiſe he had made. Don't imagine, ſays he with ſome

fire, that I ſhall forget them; I am even ſorry that I follow'd your advice, as it poſſibly may make me unhappy all my life-time: We are treated like ſo many ſlaves; but don't fail, ſays he, of ſupporting what I have promis'd to undertake for our common intereſt. The place we were in did not give us an opportunity of explaining our ſelves farther: I return'd to the band I belong'd to; and the election being over in a moment, ſuch as chance had favour'd were taken from the reſt. Joy ſparkled in their eyes; and tho' the others did their utmoſt to conceal their jealouſy, it was nevertheleſs painted on their countenances. The miniſter ſaid to us, Here are your wives; receive them from the hand of God, who has now declar'd his will; upon which he bid us embrace them. I turn'd my eyes to *Gelin*, to put him in mind that now was the time to put his deſign in execution; but was very much ſurpriz'd to ſee him immediately obey the miniſter's order. He even gave us to underſtand by a little nod, that we might imitate him. I underſtood too well, that what deſign ſoever he might have form'd to aſſiſt us, 'twas imprudent in him to go thoſe lengths, and that ſo publick a teſtimony of conſent

nt would form ſuch a tie as would be ifficult for us to break; however, his xample and that of my companions pre-ail'd with me to imitate them, when I mbrac'd with a ſorrowful air the woman was to look upon as my wife. Tho' ny heart had not been inflam'd for ano-her, I yet ſhould have diſcover'd the ame reluctance; for fortune had been o unpropitious, that it ſeem'd to have eſerv'd the moſt diſagreeable woman a-mong them for me.

THO' *Gelin* thought to do well, yet he ſequel will ſhew that he acted very mprudently, nor was I leſs ſilly than he n relying wholly upon him; but his wit and boldneſs made me fancy him the fit-teſt perſon to manage our affairs, and knowing his vivacity, I little thought he would have ruin'd our hopes by his ill-tim'd prudence and moderation. But this was the ſource of all our misfortunes: He imagin'd that in order to be more ſe-cure of the ſuſpenſion of our marriage, which he intended to require, the beſt way would be to act ſo as not to occa-ſion the leaſt doubt of our ſincerity, and this only had prompted him to embrace the woman who was preſented to him for his bride. A fatal reaſoning! which

might indeed have contributed to gain us what we then desir'd, but which afterwards ruin'd all our happiness, and had like to have cost us our lives.

The minister was going to join us with the usual ceremonies, when *Gelin* raised his voice, in order to publish our request to the whole assembly. I did not hear what he said: He deliver'd himself in *French*, that being much easier to him than our language, which he had learnt only since his leaving *France* with Mrs. *Eliot*. All the colony was compos'd of *English* and *French*; both languages were well understood in it, and the minister had spoke in the *English* tongue, in order to be better understood by me and three of my companions, as we did not understand *French*. I therefore did not understand *Gelin*'s discourse, but he spoke very gracefully, and we had no reason to suspect his intentions; besides, I easily discover'd by the countenances of the assistants that they look'd upon his request as reasonable. All the spectators applauded his discourse: The minister himself was the first person that approv'd it; he even gave the name of wisdom to the desire we shew'd of being acquainted with our destin'd brides, and meriting their affection

before

before we were join'd together for life. Six weeks were allowed us to ſatisfy ſo juſt and modeſt a deſire; and as we appear'd ſatisfied with the time, every one applauded, as we came out of the church, the conduct we had obſerv'd with regard to the aſſembly.

THERE was not one of my companions but wiſhed as ardently as myſelf for an opportunity of meeting together, in order that we might conſult on our affairs; accordingly we got away from a crowd of importunate people who were got round us, and withdrew to a ſolitary place. *Gelin* was overjoy'd, and the firſt queſtion he aſk'd us was, what we thought of the ſervice he had done us, and whether we did not approve his artful management? He afterwards confeſs'd to us, without giving us time to anſwer, that what obligations ſoever we might think we ow'd him, he was perſuaded that none of us would reap ſo much benefit from the ſucceſs of this action as himſelf. I ſhould have been undone, ſays he to us with an air of tranſport, had the miniſter and the aſſembly been as averſe to my diſcourſe as fate has been to my wiſhes. I don't conceal it from you, my friends; I am diſtractedly in love, but unhappily for me,

'tis not with the woman deſtiny has allotted me to marry. He added, that he wanted us to adviſe him in that affair, and ſtood in need of that friendly aſſiſtance he had bound himſelf by oath to give us. After he had open'd himſelf in this manner, we gaz'd one upon another; we ſeem'd to be in equal confuſion, and continued ſilent for ſome moments. At laſt we all ſpoke in our turns, and 'twas only to declare that we all labour'd under the ſame diſcontent, and deſir'd the ſame aſſiſtance as *Gelin*. This ſimilitude of affection increas'd the friendſhip which had already united us. The warmth with which each of us expreſt himſelf when he mention'd his paſſion, plainly ſhew'd the zeal with which we reſolved to ſerve each other reciprocally; becauſe there was no man among us but would meaſure the aſſiſtance he would afford others by that he himſelf requir'd of them. Our firſt debates were how to find out an expedient to ſee our miſtreſſes: This was the moſt difficult point; and as for the reſt, we relied as much on love and fortune, as on the advice we ſhould receive from one another in the conferences we propoſed frequently to hold. One of our companions got over this obſtacle, by aſſuring

ſſuring us that he had heard the man at hoſe houſe he liv'd ſay, that the girls ould not be confin'd after the elec-on was over; whence he concluded that e ſhould have the liberty to ſee and con-erſe with them, and could not but eaſily nd our miſtreſſes, as the country was ſo ittle in extent, not to mention that the houſes ſtood almoſt together round the hurch and the ſtore-houſe. We were u-nanimouſly agreed, that as prudence and diſcretion were moſt neceſſary to the ſuc-ceſs of our deſign, every one ſhould not only be careful of his own conduct, but alſo watch over his companions. Our intereſts were ſo inſeparable, that it was impoſſible but the ſlips of every ſingle perſon muſt prejudice the common cauſe. With regard to the conduct we were to obſerve to our intended wives, all we re-ſolved was, that we ſhould behave with decency, and referr'd the improvement of our ſchemes till ſuch time as our hopes ſhould be a little better grounded, and we ſhould ſee a little farther into the ſuc-ceſs of our enterprize. 'Twas neceſſary for us to meet often, in order to confer together; but as the doing this too fre-quently might occaſion ſuſpicions, we appointed twice a week only, and at the

the ſame time the exact day, hour and place.

We then ſeparated, in order to return to our reſpective habitations, and I ſtill continued at Mrs. *Eliot*'s. We had not been acquainted that we were to continue in our ſeveral places of abode till ſuch time as we were married, when each of us was to have a houſe given him, and be made maſter of a family. I found Mrs. *Eliot* alone, who expected me at ſupper, but was ſurprized to ſee four plates laid on the table, as there never had been but two before. She prevented my aſking her any queſtions about it, by telling me that as the election was over, I ſhould thenceforwards have the liberty of being in company with her daughters, and that they were going to ſup with us. I won't, ſays ſhe, ſpeak contemptuouſly of the young woman whom fate has allotted you; but without ſuffering myſelf to be blinded by the love I have for my daughters, I believe you would not have come the worſt off, had heaven given you one of them. They have pretty well anſwer'd the care I have taken of their education; and as I eſteem you ſo much, ſays the good woman, what a pleaſure would it have been to me could I have call'd you

my

ny ſon! As I was thanking her for this eſtimony ſhe gave me of her friendſhip nd civility, her daughters, to whom ſhe ad given notice of my return, came in nd ſaluted us. But now let the reader onceive, if he can, my joy and aſtoniſhment; for I diſcover'd by the firſt glance hat the youngeſt of them was the idol of my heart. 'Twas the ſame ſweet creature who had raiſed the emotions of my ſoul at church, and whom I had ſwore to love tenderly as long as I liv'd. I muſt confeſs that all the diſcreet plans I had form'd vaniſh'd away in an inſtant, when turning about to Mrs. *Eliot*, and without conſidering the effects which my tranſport might produce, Ah! madam, ſaid I, you are mother to the perſon I love, on whom all my felicity depends. She laugh'd at the exclamation I made, and anſwer'd as tho' it had been the reſult of compliment. I then perceiv'd that I had done wrong in explaining myſelf ſo openly, and therefore endeavour'd to check my imprudence in the ſequel of our converſation. But tho' my expreſſions were leſs warm, my glances were ſo paſſionate, that Mrs. *Eliot* plainly ſaw the diſpoſition of my heart. She affected to diſcourſe on indifferent ſubjects at ſup-

per,

per, and afterwards made a ſign to her daughters to withdraw. When we were alone ſhe told me with a ſerious air that ſhe fancied I had an inclination for her ſecond daughter, and that ſhe could not comprehend where I firſt form'd it; in ſhort, that the whole was a myſtery ſhe deſir'd me to clear up. I mus'd a little on what anſwer I ſhould make, being in doubt whether or no it would be prudent to truſt her; but at laſt, as I relied very much on her goodneſs, I told her ingenuouſly in what manner I had been ſtruck at church, and without diſcovering to her the circumſtances which related to my companions, I confeſs'd that fortune had determin'd ſo contrary to my inclinations, that I was ready to attempt any thing to avoid ſubmitting to it. She was ſilent for ſome time, and the perplexity ſhe ſeem'd to be in gave me the utmoſt uneaſineſs: I was afraid I had open'd myſelf too much to a woman of her prudence, and expected that ſhe would look upon my affection for her daughter as a crime. I cannot, ſays ſhe at laſt, approve your paſſion, without caſting a blemiſh on my honour, and wounding my conſcience. Your love is come too late, and I cannot ſee how you will be able to ſucceed in it: I could

ould have wiſh'd indeed from my ſoul that had been poſſible for you to marry my aughter; but ſince there's no room to ope for it, I beg you never to mention more. I am even ſorry that you ex-ain'd yourſelf ſo far. No, ſays ſhe, af-r pauſing a moment, I can't do any ing for you; 'tis now too late, and I eg of you never to open your lips about . Saying this ſhe withdrew, but not emingly angry. I made numberleſs re-ections on her anſwer: I firſt conſider'd as a dreadful ſentence, which at once laſted all my wiſhes. However, when recollected the manner of her addreſſing e, and her contemplative air, a plain ndication I thought of her approbation, perſuaded myſelf that ſhe could not ab-olutely condemn what ſhe had confeſs'd ould otherwiſe have been agreable to r; and tho' ſhe would not do any thing gratify my paſſion, yet nothing pre-nted my preſſing that ſhe might poſſi-ly approve what I might attempt for yſelf. I judg'd that decency would not rmit a woman of her age, and one ſo uch reſpected in the colony, to have y hand in the little ſtratagems of lovers, to act contrary to the deciſions of the d men. She had indeed told me, that

ſhe

ſhe was angry with me for revealing my paſſion to her; but then I ſuppos'd ſhe would not be ſo ſhould I ſucceed in my addreſſes, and that her deſign was only to hint to me that it was proper ſhe ſhould ſeem to know nothing of the matter. This explanation appear'd ſo natural to me, and agreed ſo well with the eſteem and friendſhip Mrs. *Eliot* had hitherto diſcover'd for me, that I reſolv'd to make it a kind of rule for the regulation of my conduct. 'Twill be an eaſy matter for me, ſaid I, to find out by her behaviour to me hereafter whether I have flatter'd myſelf too much. In caſe ſhe does not forbid me the ſight of her daughter, I then ſhall have room to believe that ſo far from condemning my paſſion, ſhe approves of it ſecretly, and wiſhes it may be ſucceſsful.

These agreable reflections made me paſs the night very happily; and when morning was come I ſought for an opportunity of ſeeing *Angelica*, for that was the name of Mrs. *Eliot*'s lovely daughter. I was not denied the pleaſure of converſing with her, and was ſo happy as to be ſome moments alone with her. The impreſſion which her charms had made upon me at a diſtance was faint in compariſon

mpariſon of the new ardour which a oment's converſation with her made me el. Her whole perſon ſeem'd to me a mpoſition of wonders. I continued embling with love and admiration, and hilſt I firſt contemplated on her features ſilence for a few moments, ſuch an i- age was form'd in my heart as is not the power of heaven or men ever to face. Tho' this dumb language was retty expreſſive, I nevertheleſs reſolv'd breathe my paſſion in words. She ſten'd without once interrupting me, nd did not diſcover in her eyes that af- ected anger or diſdain with which hy- ocrites and coquets endeavour to im- oſe upon their admirers. Her modeſty eveal'd itſelf by an innocent bluſh, which dded new beauty to her countenance, nd her ſincerity in her anſwer confirm'd he idea my paſſion had already form'd f her good ſenſe and tenderneſs. She old me that ſo far from being diſpleaſed t the inclination I diſcover'd for her, ſhe hank'd heaven for it; that, more indif- erent to marriage than was ſuppos'd, ſhe ad gone to the election with reluctance, ut that ſhe confeſs'd my glances, and an motion of heart ſhe could not deſcribe, had ſuſpended her indifference for ſome time;

time; that ſhe wiſh'd to be the happy perſon whom fate had deſign'd for me; that this deſire was vaſtly pleaſing, and that 'twas with regret ſhe ſaw herſelf loſt to all hope; but that as ſhe was no longer allow'd to entertain any, ſhe only reſerv'd ſome ſmall pretenſion to my eſteem and friendſhip.

THO' I had not before been conquer'd by her charms, this noble and virtuous freedom would have won me to her for ever; and therefore thought myſelf not oblig'd to be reſerv'd with a perſon of this character, or to employ the little artifices with which vulgar lovers uſe to ſucceed in their amours. I inſtantly reſolved to diſcover to her not only all the ſecrets of my own heart, but even what my companions had concerted, and did not conceal either their murmurs or machinations. If I have been ſo fortunate, ſaid I, as to merit a little of your eſteem before I was ſo happy as to converſe with and know you, I have ſome reaſon to flatter myſelf that this declaration of my love will not leſſen it. I now make to you the oath I have ſworn a thouſand times internally, never to love any perſon but you; or in caſe I am not ſo happy as to obtain your affection, to abandon the whole ſex. But

why

why ſhould I not hope you'll have ſome regard for me? Are you not intirely the miſtreſs of my deſtiny? And to what purpoſe is the decree of fortune, if you do but declare in my favour? In a word, 'tis in your power to grant me all that my heart deſires. Let me now ſee whether the eſteem you flatter'd me with is ſufficient to make you attempt any thing for my ſake? —— This lovely woman was as prudent as ſhe was beautiful and modeſt. She anſwer'd that ſhe had explain'd herſelf ſufficiently, to ſhew that ſhe ſhould think it a happineſs to be mine; but then ſhe ſaw ſo little poſſibility of it, that there was no room to entertain the leaſt hopes of it; that ſhe was oblig'd to act with the utmoſt caution, for the ſake of her duty and honour, and that after the deciſion of fortune, and the conſent we had given to it, ſhe ſaw no poſſibility of reconciling them with love. I eaſily anſwer'd this objection: The conduct, ſaid I, of your people, with regard to us, is unjuſt and tyrannical; and 'tis a thing unprecedented to oblige men that are free to marry women whom they cannot love. Hitherto indeed every thing has ſeem'd voluntary on our ſide, but then a falſe conſtruction has been put

put on our inclinations, if what was on
an effect of our prudence was look'd u
on as a mark of our consent. We d
not oppose the election, because at t
same time that we were afraid of fomen
ing divisions in the colony, we hop'd th
fate would be so propitious to us as
make us satisfied with our lot. Un
happily it has declar'd against us; th
is a misfortune that gives us some pai
as it may occasion uneasinesses; but w
are so far from resolving to comply wit
it, that we are all resolved to recover th
liberty we have been unjustly depriv'd o
What upright man would condemn
equitable and natural a resolution?
therefore don't see any thing in my ad
dresses that any way interferes with you
duty. I am in the same case with a ten
der and passionate lover who endeavour
to gain the affections of a woman he a
dores; and as all my desires are ground
ed on honour, you may compleat my fe
licity without injuring either your ho
nour or innocence. I then told her, tha
what I said might make the greater im
pression, the reasons I had to think tha
her mother would not be displeased a
my passion, and represented to her tha
she should not regard the censure of
few

few old men, and ſome jealous rivals, if heaven and her mother did but indulge us their approbation. She agreed that what I ſaid was right, and was ſo delighted with what I told her concerning her mother, that ſhe did not ſcruple to tell me at once ſhe was ready to acquieſce with my wiſhes, provided her mother conſented to it. As I did not intend to deceive her, I was ſo frank as to tell her, that what I call'd her mother's approbation was to be received with ſome reſtrictions. I made her comprehend, that as her parent was bound by the political conſiderations of reſpect, ſhe poſſibly might ſcruple to grant us a direct conſent; but then, ſaid I, I am certain ſhe approves of it in her heart, and wiſhes it may be ſucceſsful. Juſt as I ſpoke theſe words Mrs. *Eliot* happen'd to come into the room. Her preſence ſuggeſted a little artifice which was of advantage to me; and this was to get cunningly from her own mouth the confirmation of what I had related with regard to her inclinations; being fully perſuaded by the anſwer her daughter had juſt before made me, that the leaſt appearance of a direct approbation would remove every obſtacle. Alas! madam, ſaid I with a melancholy tone as

ſhe came in, what have I done that fat
ſhould exclude me from the pleaſing hop
of calling you mother? 'Tis only ſince
ſaw *Angelica* that I have learnt to feel a
my ſorrows; I never ſhall be eaſy. —
I am as afflicted as you can be, replie
Mrs. *Eliot* frankly: I believe you coul
have been very well pleaſed with that lit
tle creature, ſays ſhe, pointing to he
daughter: She's a very good-natur'
girl, and I will be ſo vain as to ſay, ver
like myſelf. You would then, ſaid I
have freely indulg'd her to my wiſhes
and therefore I am only to accuſe fortune
ſince I ſhould have obtain'd your con
ſent. —— Tho' theſe expreſſions were
wholly the effect of art, I yet ſpoke them
with as much warmth as tho' they had
been ſuggeſted by nature, and was even
melted to tears. Mrs. *Eliot* perceiving it
could not forbear weeping, when taking
me by the hand, ſhe aſſur'd me ſhe could
have hazarded her life with pleaſure to
obtain me for her daughter's huſband.
This confeſſion was all I deſir'd; upon
which I chang'd the converſation, and
defer'd to another opportunity the ma-
king a proper uſe of what *Angelica* had
heard. I was not long without one; for
the inchanting maid ſaw into my whole
deſign,

eſign, and as her heart was incapable of arbouring the leaſt diſſimulation, ſhe onfeſs'd that the innocent ſtratagem hich love had prompted me to employ, ave her the higheſt ſatisfaction. I am, ys ſhe with a moſt charming frankneſs, erſuaded of two things: the firſt is, that ou have a ſincere affection for me; for o what elſe can I aſcribe this preference ou give me over the reſt of my com-anions, and what affects me ſtill more, hat ardour, that emotion which I diſco-er in you every time you move towards ne? I judge of the impulſes of your heart y thoſe I feel in my own. Moreover, ys ſhe, I don't doubt, from what my mother ſaid, but ſhe approves your paſ-ion in her own mind; and I conceive at he ſame time that ſhe is oblig'd to ob-erve a certain decorum, and therefore ou are not to expect that ſhe will give ou a more expreſs conſent. But ſuppo-ing I need only be careful of my honour nd duty, tell me, ſays ſhe, bluſhing at he ſame time, what you require me to do, and how you think to make me your wife? This queſtion threw me into the utmoſt perplexity; for, to confeſs the truth, I had not yet thought of any ex-pedient to ſatisfy a virtuous young wo-

man. I depended on *Gelin*'s art and vivacity. This was to be debated in our first interview; I therefore was oblig'd to own to my dear miſtreſs that I had not yet fix'd upon the expedient; but I aſſur'd her that as I had as great a regard for her honour as ſhe herſelf could have, ſhe might depend upon it I never would propoſe any thing to her inconſiſtent with it. My companions, ſaid I, and myſelf, have the moſt chaſte and innocent views. We are to meet together, in order to take a common reſolution on this important article, and whatſoever it be, 'twill be as much the reſult of love as of wiſdom and virtue. I indeed waited for the day of our aſſembly with the utmoſt impatience. In this interval, decency obliged me to viſit ſometimes the woman whom chance had appointed for my wife; but then the compariſon I made of her every viſit with the real object of my affections, made me ſtill fonder of the amiable *Angelica*. I was almoſt continually in her company; and as it was natural, ſince I liv'd with Mrs. *Eliot*, that I ſhould be very familiar with her daughters, no great notice could be taken of my addreſſes. I daily found, that how violent ſoever a lover may imagine his

flame

ame is, yet this paſſion is ever increa-ng; for the laſt moments I ſpent with *Angelica* were always the moſt delightful: diſcover'd new charms in her every mo-ent, and what compleated my ſatisfac-on was, that I did not endeavour more ſſiduouſly to convince her of my ſince-ty, than ſhe did to ſhew me that ſhe had e deepeſt ſenſe of the obligations ſhe wed me for it.

THE time for our conference being ome, my companions met as punctually s I did: We had thought proper not to e ſeen together ſome days before, in or-er that our meeting might not be ſuſ-ected. This caution was very neceſſary, s we had to do with ſo many ſuſpicious ld men, who had nothing elſe to do but watch us; wherefore we were vaſtly leas'd at this opportunity we had of eeting together, and diſcourſing as we hould think proper. 'Twould have been n agreable ſight for an indifferent per-on to have ſeen the confuſion we were in t our firſt greeting, every one being ea-er to ſpeak, and to give an account of the poſture of his affairs. At laſt we all told ur ſtory: Not one of us had complain'd f love, for all our miſtreſſes prov'd kind, ut with this difference perhaps, that

ſome had comply'd leſs out of eſteem fo
their lovers, than from the ſtrong incli
nation they had to put on the marriage
fetters. However, we all ſeemed to b
equally well ſatisfied, ſelf-love perſuad
ing us that we ow'd our conqueſts to ou
merit. The buſineſs was to give a hap
py iſſue to ſo good a beginning, and ſe
veral methods were propos'd, all which
were a long time debated upon: That o
addreſſing our grievances in a body to th
colony, was rejected as too uncertain
for our misfortune would have been irre
mediable, had the old men been let into
our deſigns, and refus'd their conſent
That of leaving the iſland, and carrying
off our miſtreſſes, was alſo look'd upon
as dangerous, tho' *Gelin* himſelf made th
motion. We ſhould have run great ha
zards, not only in the methods we ſhould
have been oblig'd to employ to elude th
vigilance of the inhabitants, and ſeize up
on the barks; but ſtill greater in th
flight itſelf, which we could not preten
to attempt, without a pilot through th
wide ocean, as we were wholly ignoran
of navigation. However, *Gelin* inſiſte
ſtrongly on this laſt propoſal. 'Twill
ſays he, be as eaſy for us to leave th
iſland as to aſſemble here ſecretly; we'l
mee

meet on the ſtrand in the night-time; and as for the chains by which the barks are held, we may eaſily force them away: We won't run them into the ſea till day-break, and I don't ſee why we ſhould not find out the iſland of St. *Helena* as well as Mr. *Drington* did. This argument had no manner of weight with us. To judge by the event, poſſibly we might better have follow'd it; but we then look'd upon it as a raſh undertaking, not to mention that we did not think ourſelves ſo ſecure of our miſtreſſes as to dare make them ſo odd a propoſal as that of abandoning their parents and friends, and flying away with us. The third propoſal was, that we ſhould marry privately. *Gellin*, who alſo propos'd this, repreſented to us the neceſſity of it with ſo much art and eloquence, that we rejected the two former, and were oblig'd to confeſs 'twas the only propoſal that was feaſible. The moſt fearful among us ſtarted ſome other difficulties; but theſe were over-rul'd by the ſtrong reſolution we had of indulging our paſſion. How far ſoever the old men and the ſlighted maids might carry their reſentments, we at leaſt ſuppos'd that they would never once harbour a thought of taking our miſtreſſes from us,

after they had once received our plighted faith, and they themſelves ſhould have allowed us the liberty of marrying. This propoſal at laſt prevail'd, ſo that all now remain'd was, to get our miſtreſſes to conſent, and this depended on our management. We ſcarce doubted of the ſucceſs of it; for 'twas not probable they would long demur, when their ſhe-companions ſhould ſet them ſo good an example. Numbers give courage, and thoſe who boaſt the greateſt wiſdom are incapable of withſtanding the attacks of love, when they think they have hit upon reaſons to juſtify themſelves.

THIS important deliberation being ended in this manner, we parted full of the moſt agreable hopes. *Angelica* gave me an opportunity the very next day of explaining myſelf to her, in order that ſhe might hear the reſult of our conference. I did not diſguiſe any part of it: You are ſincere, ſaid I, and therefore your anſwers muſt be deciſive. Remember that the expedient I propoſe to you is the only one that can make me yours for ever. 'Tis ſuch an expedient as virtue cannot condemn, and if you liſten but ever ſo little to love, you'll find it a very eaſy one. What, ſaid I, will be

wanting

wanting to make our union holy and lawful? You know what it is that the eſſence of marriage conſiſts in; 'tis not in a vain ceremony, but in the gift of the heart, and the oaths and promiſes which accompany it. Five couple of lovers ſhall be witneſſes of ours, to whom we'll do the ſame ſervice they require of us, and who ſhall be engag'd by ſelf-intereſt to atteſt the truth of our vows. The ſole reaſon, ſaid I, of my mentioning theſe motives is, merely to remove all ſcruples which honour and the leaſt ſhadow of fear might ſuggeſt; for the chief inducement to engage your conſent ſhould owe itſelf to the tenderneſs and violence of my flame. She anſwer'd, that as we had employ'd ſome time before we had made this reſolution, I could not take it ill if ſhe herſelf alſo deſir'd time to revolve theſe things in her own mind; that ſhe indeed foreſaw that her concluſions would be agreable to my deſires; but that whatever ſtep I might engage her to take, ſhe yet would throw in one condition, without which ſhe believ'd it impoſſible to gratify both our wiſhes with convenience; that ſhe deſir'd her mother might be inform'd of our marriage, at leaſt as ſoon as it was concluded; and

that ſhe thought it would be proper for me to acquaint her with it firſt. I promiſed to comply exactly with all ſhe deſir'd. 'Tis, ſaid I, in your happineſs only that mine can be found; thus my whole attention will be to make you content and happy, by doing always whatever you ſhall deſire. She was ſo much affected with my paſſionate expreſſions, that ſhe confeſs'd before our converſation ended, that ſhe ſhould come to a ſpeedy reſolution.

Love was equally propitious to the reſt of my companions. At the third conſultation, we found, after each man had given an account of the progreſs he had made, that we might all rely on our miſtreſſes affections. We were to enjoy our liberty about a month longer; but as we were eager to gratify our wiſhes, we reſolved to make all poſſible diſpatch. 'Twas now the moſt beautiful ſeaſon of the year. We pitched upon the night following for the ſolemnization of our amorous myſteries; and the place being mentioned, we thought none was better adapted to our purpoſe than that we were then aſſembled in. 'Twas a beautiful meadow, ſurrounded with a thicket, about a hundred yards from the town, if I may ſo call it. We agreed

greed that every one ſhould bring thither about midnight the dear object of his affections. The day before was to be employ'd in our miſtreſſes ſervice, and in aſſiſting them to ſteal away from their reſpective habitations. *Angelica* trembled when I told her we were ſo near the moment which was to crown our felicity. I had now ſome new ſtruggles to combat with, and a few ſlight objections to obviate; but love ſtood my friend on theſe occaſions, and immediately remov'd all the difficulties which my amiable miſtreſs ſtarted: ſo that *Angelica* promiſed to be ready to follow me at midnight.

And now the wiſh'd-for hour was come. All was calm and huſh in the colony, ſix couple of happy lovers excepted, whoſe felicity was juſt approaching. I waited for *Angelica* at the ſtreet-door, which I had open'd ſoftly. She did not make me wait long; but Gods! with what raptures did I ſee her appear, and look round for me with a fearful and confus'd eye! I diſcover'd myſelf, and receiving her for the firſt time with open arms, I claſp'd her with a rapturous embrace. We flew to the meadow in an inſtant, where part of our companions were got with their miſtreſſes. The moon ſeem'd to ſhine with

unuſual brightneſs, and as tho' it was delighted to behold a ſight worthy the attention of heaven and earth; and by an effect of the exquiſite ſatisfaction of my heart, which diffus'd itſelf in ſome meaſure over all nature, I never found the air ſo ſoft, or the verdure ſo beautiful as it was all the reſt of that charming night.

As ſoon as our little company were got together, *Gelin*, who had aſſum'd ſome ſuperiority over us, by his deciſive air and great volubility of tongue, harangued in a very agreable manner on the ceremony which was going to begin. He firſt gave thanks to love and fortune, in the name of the aſſembly; when, talking more in the Chriſtian ſtyle, he expatiated on the duties of the marriage ſtate with as much eloquence as the moſt able preacher could have done. We all applauded his diſcourſe, when he read a kind of oath which he had drawn up, the terms of which were ſo very ſtrong and binding, that, abſtracted from the great love we had for our fair-ones, made us for ever theirs: it was admirably well adapted to check inconſtancy, and prevent diſtaſte, tho' we were to cohabit a thouſand years with them. We all repeated it one after another, and our miſ-

treſſes, or rather brides, did the ſame after us. The whole ceremony was perform'd with the utmoſt decency; what therefore was wanting to make this a holy and ſolemn marriage? Heaven no doubt approv'd of it, for we had taken ſtrict care not to act in oppoſition to its dictates. Nevertheleſs, a ſet of men were ſo barbarous and unjuſt, as to look upon this union as ſacrilegious; and diſſolved ties which ought to be as immortal by their nature, as they ſhould be by our inclination. I can never reflect on this delicious night, without admiring that my heart, which was then ſuſceptible of ſo much joy, could afterwards be oppreſſed with grief and deſpair! Heavens! how unaccountable is the ſudden tranſition from the moſt exquiſite felicity to the extremes of miſery!

Every inſtant of this lovely night was diſtinguiſhed by a tranſport; we ſpent it in the arms of our dear wives. How ſwift did the moments fly! But alas! 'twas the greateſt imprudence in us, not to ſuſpect its being ſo fleeting. Day-light now broke in upon us, when we found too late, that we had for ſome time taken the light of the ſun for that of the moon. There was no one among us but

was ſenſible of the danger to which we had expoſed ourſelves, which was ſtill more to be apprehended upon our wives account; for it was neceſſary they ſhould all ſlip into their houſes unperceiv'd; but this was ſcarcely practicable. We already heard the inhabitants, who were coming out of their houſes, and fear made us think they were going to look for their daughters; upon which we held a council for a few moments. Several of my companions were of opinion, that we ſhould all return home together without the leaſt ceremony, and tell all we met with that we were married: this, ſay they, we ſhall one day be obliged to do; let us therefore take this opportunity, ſince we cannot extricate ourſelves any other way. Our brides oppos'd this reſolution out of fear and baſhfulneſs, fancying that they would inevitably be expos'd to a certain ſhame, in caſe it ſhould be known that they had been catch'd in ſome meaſure in the fact. Notwithſtanding they confeſs'd that they muſt be obliged one time or other to reveal their marriage, they yet wiſh'd it might be done by degrees, and ſo as not to expoſe them to raillery, thinking they had nothing elſe to dread; which was alſo our opinion.

opinion. To ſatisfy them, we agreed that they ſhould go to the village, when in caſe they could not ſteal into their houſes unperceiv'd, they then ſhould invent ſome ſtory, in order to excuſe their ſtaying abroad all night. I can't conceive what excuſe they could have hit upon; but the moment as they were leaving us, after having tenderly embraced, we ſpy'd the miniſter of the colony advancing towards us with ſeveral old men. They were come only to take the air, but the ſight of ſix of their daughters, whom they ſaw in our company, and ſome of them in our arms, ſtruck them with fear and aſtoniſhment. They walked on as faſt as their age would give them leave. Fear prompted us firſt to fly, and to run childiſhly behind the trees; but we conſider'd that this was declaring ourſelves guilty. *Gelin* again propos'd that we ſhould go and declare our marriage, but in vain; and 'twas alſo diſapprov'd by our wives. Upon this, ſaid I, we are all undone, in caſe we are diſconcerted: liſten to me, I'll undertake to manage the affair. The miniſter muſt certainly have ſeen us, but then I don't believe he was able to know how many we were exactly. Two of us, ſaid I, ſhall ſquat

down, and creep along till they get to the trees. Upon which I made two of them do ſo, and bid them hide as well as they could. And now, ſaid I to the reſt, let us and our wives go up to the miniſter. We'll tell them, that as we were walking in the air this morning, we happen'd to meet with them by mere chance: he'll not have the leaſt notion that we met in an amorous way, when he ſees more men than women. They all applauded my expedient. It happened very luckily that the graſs was high enough to hide our two companions, for the miniſter and his company were not above forty yards from us. We went up to them, and as we were going I deſir'd *Gelin*, who expreſſed himſelf with greater fluency than I did, to ſpeak as I had adviſed him to do. He accordingly did ſo, and with ſo unconcern'd an air, that they ſeem'd to believe him. Nevertheleſs, as they were returning to the village with us, they put on ſuch a ſerious countenance as ſurprized me very much; for I did not ſuppoſe that they had ſeen us embrace, or ſuſpected that *Gelin* had told them a ſtory. Several of the inhabitants ſeem'd to take a particular notice of our coming in a body; but the miniſter's being

being along with us ſecur'd us from calumny.

We all took leave of him with a pretty indifferent air, when the five wives of my companions went home, and I did not hear whether their abſence had been perceiv'd, or what reception they met with. As for my ſelf, who had the ſame way to go as my wife, I concerted with her what excuſe we ſhould employ to ſatisfy her mother. What occaſion, ſaid I, have we to uſe any ſcruples? You know what we agreed upon, and what I promiſed at your own requeſt. I'll detain your mother whilſt you're going to your chamber, when I'll acquaint her at once with our mutual paſſion and our marriage. We have no occaſion to be afraid of her; ſhe loves us, and therefore her anger will neither laſt long, or be violent. I am not afraid, ſays my dear partner, upon my own account; but I have a foreboding that ſomething ſiniſter will happen to you. I cou'd wiſh that I only were to ſuffer by it. The tone of voice with which ſhe utter'd theſe words, chill'd the blood in my veins, when I ſtopt and fix'd my eyes ſtedfaſtly upon her. Gods! ſaid I, what is it you declare to me, and wherefore theſe words? She continued for ſome time

time without making me any anſwer, but as I urged her to ſpeak, ſhe begg'd me to pardon her for having conceal'd from me a thing ſhe had heard the night before. Yeſterday, ſays ſhe, after we had talk'd together, my ſiſter told me that the miniſter had made my mother a viſit; that they had diſcourſed together a long time with great warmth, and that ſhe had an opportunity of liſtning to part of their converſation. Tho' ſhe did not hear it diſtinctly, ſhe yet found by certain expreſſions the miniſter uſed, that he complain'd of your indifference for that perſon whom fate had allotted for your wife; and aſcrib'd it to the inclination he fancied you had for my ſiſter or me. My mother proteſted ſhe knew nothing of the matter: But this imperious and paſſionate man, who commands the reſpect of the colony, anſwered, that 'twas a matter which concern'd her highly; when going away he bid her remember what had happen'd to *Guiton*. This, ſays *Angelica*, is a ſtory capable of terrifying all ſuch huſbands as preſume to act contrary to their duty. Mr. *Guiton* was one of the chief men of our colony; every one had the utmoſt eſteem for him, becauſe, abſtracted from his perſonal merit, he was

ſon

ſon to the mayor of *Rochelle*, who govern'd it during the ſiege, and ſignaliz'd himſelf by an extraordinary love for religion. But having the ill fortune to be ſurpriz'd in a love-intrigue with another man's wife, he was ſentenced to be thrown into the ſea with his love, before the whole colony; and it was accordingly executed. All the old men thought themſelves obliged to make him an example, in order to make the bands of wedlock inviolable. Tho' this ſtory, ſays my wife, made the deepeſt impreſſion on me, I yet did not think proper to acquaint you with it; not only becauſe men might have perſuaded me, that our engagement is not contrary to juſtice, and conſequently, that we are not in the ſame caſe with *Guiton*; but from a ſtronger motive which I am not aſhamed to own to you, I mean the great love I have for you. I neceſſarily muſt be under ſome apprehenſions that yours will grow colder, by the dread it may fill you with. I am, ſays ſhe, more fearful to day than I was yeſterday. I know not whether 'twas our meeting the miniſter that makes me ſo uneaſy, or whether, as I am now yours, I am therefore more afraid of loſing you; but methinks my heart tells me ſecretly, that ſome evil will

will happen to you. Wou'd to heaven that my uneaſineſs may be vain, or at leaſt that the evil may light upon me only.

As I was troubled at the beginning of this diſcourſe, the concluſion of it eas'd me. I conſider'd only the tender and amiable part of it, and aſſur'd my wife that I ſhould love her eternally for it. Mr. *Guiton*'s ſtory, ſaid I, is very different from ours. If you had told it me yeſterday, and the miniſter's threatening viſit, it would have made as little impreſſion upon me then as it does now. You love me, do you not? You don't repent of what you have done for me, and are reſolv'd to be true to your engagement ſo long as life ſhall laſt? Let the miniſter complain and threaten if he will, we are not his ſlaves. As for the evils you fear, I don't think heaven is preparing any for us, ſince we have not deſerv'd them; and in caſe men ſhould reſolve to injure us, they poſſibly may not find it an eaſy matter; and depend upon it, their malice ſhall not eaſily reach you. I am indeed much eaſier, and more reſolute ſince our marriage than I was before. *Angelica* was mine, ſo that my wiſhes were indulg'd; nor had I any fears, for beſides the ſtrength of our bands, which I thought

it would be impoſſible for the miniſter or the colony to break, I felt myſelf inſpir'd with ſo much courage as would enable me to defend mine and my wife's privileges.

WE were now come to her mother's, and I did not find any one had taken notice of our abſence. Whilſt *Angelica* ſtole ſoftly to her chamber, I went into a room where I found Mrs. *Eliot* alone. She received me in ſuch a manner that I was ſure ſhe had not heard of our elopement, which made me almoſt reſolve to take that opportunity of diſcovering our marriage to her. After many reflections, I fancied it would be better to do ſo, ſince it would prevent other people from making any ill impreſſions on her mind with regard to our proceedings. —— I fell on my knees, and told her I was her ſon. — The fear, ſaid I, of diſpleaſing you, or rather that of expoſing you to any danger, prevented me from acquainting you with our marriage before we had ſolemniz'd it; but I flatter'd myſelf that you would not be diſpleas'd with me afterwards, ſince you wiſh'd it: The lovely *Angelica* is my wife: I would have ſacrific'd the greateſt favours of fortune to arrive at this happineſs; the only thing now

now that is wanting, is your conſent to make our felicity perfect; for next to the title of *Angelica*'s huſband, nothing is ſo dear to me as that of your ſon. I might have made a much longer ſpeech, before Mrs. *Eliot* could have been able to anſwer me, ſhe being in the utmoſt ſurprize, and ſeiz'd with dread. At laſt, after I had continued ſilent for ſome time, ſhe anſwer'd me with a trembling voice, that ſhe wiſh'd to heaven we had not acted too raſhly; and that it would have been impoſſible for her to have heard a more ſtrange or a more perplexing piece of news. Explain yourſelf farther, ſays ſhe, with an air of confuſion; tell me what it is you call your marriage, and in what manner you are become my ſon. — I then told her our whole adventure. Dear *Bridge!* ſays ſhe, after I had ſpoke, I am afraid you have acted imprudently, and plung'd us into difficulties whence we ſhall never extricate ourſelves. I won't conceal from you that I wiſh'd to ſee you my daughter's huſband, and that even this inſtant, in the midſt of my confuſion, I am glad you are ſo: But liſten to what you are to fear, and very poſſibly myſelf alſo: I tremble ſo much to think of it, that I can ſcarce reveal it to you.

you.—— She then told me the diſcourſe ſhe had had the day before with the miniſter, whereof her daughter had heard only a part. That haughty and imperious clergyman was exaſperated againſt me for a particular reaſon, the woman whom chance had allotted for my wife being his brother's daughter. She had told him, and he himſelf might poſſibly have taken notice, that I had diſcover'd very little love when I viſited her; and indeed it would have been impoſſible for me to court a woman who, to my eye, was a very diſagreable creature, tho' I had not been ſo very fond of the charming *Angelica*. I had viſited the former very ſeldom, and leſs than I ought to have done for my own ſake and that of decency. The miniſter, who was very fond of his niece, looking upon my indifference as a mark of contempt and averſion, was prodigiouſly nettled; and as we are always blind to the imperfections of thoſe we love, he had not aſcrib'd my coldneſs ſo much to the ill qualities of his niece, as to my bad taſte. As I us'd to ſtay whole days together at Mrs. *Eliot*'s without ſtirring out, he ſuppos'd that nothing but love could be the motive of it, and then calling to

mind

mind the great teſtimonies of friendſhip that good woman had diſcover'd for me on all occaſions, and her civility in offering me her houſe till ſuch time as one ſhould be provided for me, he was perſuaded that ſhe indulg'd the paſſion I muſt certainly have for one of her daughters. Theſe were the circumſtances which had brought him to her houſe, and made him ſo angry. Mrs. *Eliot* at firſt anſwer'd his reproaches with great coolneſs; but he afterwards broke into certain injurious expreſſions ſhe could not bear, and therefore had anſwer'd him in a very ſharp manner. In a word, Mrs. *Eliot*, to defend the honour of her daughters, told him that ſhe had given them ſo virtuous an education there was no fear they would ever act as *Guiton*'s miſtreſs had done. Now who ſhould this woman be, who had been thrown into the ſea with her lover, but the miniſter's ſiſter-in-law, his niece's mother. An eccleſiaſtic ſeldom pardons an outrage of this nature: he had led Mrs. *Eliot*, at his going away, to recollect that he had firſt given his voice to have his ſiſter-in-law put to death, for an example to the whole colony; and he proteſted with an oath, that as he had acted with ſo much ſeverity againſt his own

own family, he ſhould employ much greater againſt thoſe who ſhould ſwerve never ſo little from their duty. I don't doubt, ſays Mrs. *Eliot*, but he hinted at one of my daughters when he threaten'd in this manner. The improbability to me there was yeſterday that ſuch a ſcene would have been acted laſt night as I find there has been, prevented me from charging my daughters to be more circumſpect than ever in their conduct. The *evil* is done, and we are thereby expos'd to the utmoſt reſentment of our miniſter. —— Alas! dear mother, ſaid I interrupting her, what name is that you give to the moſt ſacred ties that ever were made? you call it an *evil*, and I defy the miniſter ever to prove any thing guilty in it.— I confeſs, ſays ſhe, that as you have proceeded in it, it deſerves a better name, and I will therefore look upon your marriage as holy and lawful; but you don't know what it is to be the object of an eccleſiaſtic's hatred, and are unacquainted with the character of our parſon in particular. Depend upon't, ſays ſhe, he'll ſet every engine at work to deſtroy us.

I MUST confeſs that the hearing her talk in this manner, and recollecting the great obligations by which ſhe had bound me,

me, I could not forbear breaking into a violent paſſion: He deſtroy us! ſaid I, he ſhould not live a moment longer, could I think he harbour'd the leaſt thought of that kind. Don't be afraid, madam, ſaid I, tho' there are but ſix of us, I yet believe we are capable of making a greater number dread us: We'll do ourſelves juſtice, ſince we are forc'd to it; and be aſſur'd that we won't do any thing that ſhall prejudice you. — I was going to my companions, in order to encourage them to ſtand up in their own defence; but Mrs. *Eliot* ſeeing me in ſuch a paſſion, deſir'd me to ſtay a little till I was cooler. I then deſir'd her to give orders for *Angelica*'s being call'd, whom I deſir'd to preſent to her mother. She came in with an air of confuſion. Come, dearеſt creature, ſaid I, come and thank the kindeſt of mothers, who forgives us for marrying without her conſent; 'twas ſhe only we had reaſon to dread; but her goodneſs is not to be parallell'd by any thing, except the malice of her enemies. I thank heaven that they are ours at the ſame time; and methinks I bind myſelf to you as ſtrongly by the oaths I have made to defend and revenge you, as by that I have taken to love you eternally. Mrs. *Eliot* was

was extremely kind upon this occaſion. She entreated me to calm my tranſports, and not to diſcover my reſentments till ſuch time as the parſon ſhould go about to put his threats in execution. Then, ſaid ſhe, I ſhall exert myſelf to the utmoſt for both your ſakes. She then embrac'd her daughter, ſhedding a few tears at the ſame time. She ſaid, that indeed ſhe ſhould never have conſented to our marriage in caſe we had aſk'd it; but that ſince providence had order'd matters ſo happily, ſhe could not but expreſs the ſatisfaction it now gave her. However, ſaid ſhe, I am far from being eaſy in my mind; and I apprehend ſo many dreadful conſequences, either from the parſon and our old men, who will not fail of condemning the ſteps you have taken; or from you and your companions, who very poſſibly will oppoſe the meaſures they intend to take, and uſe you in a cruel manner, that I cannot forbear ſhuddering when I think of our impending fate. I again aſſur'd her, that whatever might be the event, ſhe ſhould not be expos'd to the leaſt danger ſo long as I ſhould be able to defend her.

WHILST I was endeavouring to encourage her in this manner, and dividing my ten-

derneſs between my good mother-in-law and my dear wife, word was brought me that a ſervant of the miniſter's deſir'd to ſpeak with me. I was going to ſend him back without hearing what he had to ſay, but Mrs. *Eliot* adviſ'd me to the contrary. The ſervant told me that his maſter wanted to ſpeak with me that inſtant at his houſe. Poſſibly in the paſſion I was in I ſhould have refus'd to go, had I not conſider'd that I might poſſibly hear ſomething in this viſit that might be of advantage to us, and upon that I went thither; and being come, was carried to a parlour, where I was very much ſurprized to find the reſt of my companions. They told me that the miniſter had ſent for them alſo, and as we were alone, I acquainted them what I had heard from Mrs. *Eliot*, and hinted the conſequences they were to draw with regard to themſelves, from the circumſtances ſhe had inform'd me of. Mrs. *Eliot*, ſaid I, is a woman of great wiſdom and experience; ſhe trembles for her daughter and myſelf, and depend upon't that 'tis not without cauſe; nor is there any evil can befal us on this occaſion but you muſt be involved in it; when I therefore mention my intereſt to you, I believe your's muſt be inſepara-

ble from it. They all anſwer'd, that I need not mention any other motives than thoſe of friendſhip to engage them to defend both mine and my wife's cauſe; not to mention, that as we had mutually embark'd in one affair, we muſt conſequently be bound by one common intereſt. Saying this, we engag'd ourſelves that inſtant, by the moſt dreadful oaths, to ſtand by each other to the laſt drop of our blood. As I had firſt propos'd this new confederacy, and they called to mind the ſervice I had done them in the meadow, they choſe me for their head, and nominated *Gelin* my aſſiſtant; and this being done, they took a freſh oath to obey us implicitly, in all things which ſhould relate to our common intereſt, and that of our wives; and this was done in an inſtant.

BUT now the miniſter came in. I gaz'd upon him with eyes glowing with rage and indignation, for I abhorr'd both his perſon and behaviour. He addreſt himſelf to me firſt, thinking that the late ſcene was of my contriving. The whole colony, ſaid he, is very much diſguſted at your behaviour. 'Tis a thing unheard of among us, for people of your age, who are already bound by the moſt

holy promiſes, to wives whom providence itſelf has allotted you, to walk out in the night-time with perſons of another ſex. As this has given the utmoſt ſcandal, we are reſolv'd not to let it paſs uncenſur'd. We are not eaſily impos'd upon by fictitious ſtories: Where had you been this morning, ſaid he to me with a ſevere voice, when I met you with a company of young women; women loſt to all ſenſe of modeſty?

The ſhort but warm converſation I had juſt before had with my companions, and that I had with Mrs. *Eliot*, left the ſtrongeſt impreſſion upon me; ſo that I muſt confeſs that I was not cool enough to anſwer this haughty queſtion with temper and moderation. When we firſt came into the iſland, ſaid I to him in a no leſs angry tone, we juſtly imagin'd that all the privileges which the inhabitants enjoy, would be indulged us, and eſpecially the two principal ones, I mean liberty and equality. In caſe we do acknowledge any ſuperiority here over us, 'tis not that of a private perſon, whoſe only office is to read prayers in church, but that of the general aſſembly of the colony only. I would therefore, Sir, ſaid I, adviſe you to lay aſide that haughty

and imperious air, which becomes you worſe than any other perſon: We'll give an account of our actions to thoſe who are impower'd to enquire into them. Theſe words quite diſconcerted the miniſter's pride; however, after a moment's ſilence he recover'd. Don't fall into a miſtake, ſaid he; tho' I don't aſſume any authority in this place, I yet declare to you that I ſpeak the ſentiments of the whole colony, and in their name I again aſk you where you had been this morning? As he was ſo very urgent, and fearing to prejudice our matters in caſe I refus'd to anſwer; I then reſolved to put an end to the affair, by telling him at once that we were married: upon which I look'd upon my companions, to prepare them for what they were going to hear, in order that they ſhould ſee I did not do any thing imprudently and without reflection; afterwards turning about to the miniſter; Learn then, ſaid I to him with an eaſy and reſpectful behaviour, what you ſeem ſo very deſirous of knowing: We are born free, and therefore nothing ſeem'd ſo unjuſt or ſo ill-contriv'd as that odious ceremony of caſting lots for wives; neither an *Engliſhman* nor a *Frenchman* can ſuffer their hearts to be tyranniz'd over in

this manner. We have had recourſe to our native privileges, and therefore have ourſelves made choice of the moſt tender, the moſt amiable women for our wives; women who will hereafter divide our pleaſures and pains, and adminiſter freſh delights to us in this calm and innocent ſeat. 'Twould have been impoſſible for us to be happy without them, and as we were aſſur'd that felicity would attend upon us when we were brought hither, we hope we ſhall be ſuffer'd to enjoy what only can make us happy. Having ſaid theſe words, I made a low bow to him, which my companions did alſo, but without opening their lips.

It would be to no purpoſe for me to attempt to deſcribe the firſt motions of his ſurprize and indignation: He alternately bluſh'd and turn'd pale twenty times in a minute; he ſwell'd, but was unable to open his lips, or to breathe his rage, which ſeem'd ready to break out. I was aſham'd to ſee him in ſuch tranſports; upon which I beckon'd to my companions to follow me, and going away, I ſaid to him; You now, Sir, have been let into our ſecret, which we told you purpoſely that you might make it public. 'Tis the property of guilt to

conceal

conceal itſelf as much as poſſible, but we cannot reproach ourſelves with any crimes. He then anſwer'd, that he'd prove us guilty of more than one, and would find out means to puniſh us, upon which we left him. My companions thanked me a thouſand times for the ſervice I had done them; proteſted that they were much eaſier in their minds, and indeed I myſelf was ſo. We now did not ſcruple to acquaint every one we met with what had happen'd: ſome ſeem'd to approve it, and others ſeem'd ſurpriz'd, and would not tell us what they thought. We then renew'd our mutual engagements before we ſeparated; and the better to purſue our meaſures in concert, we reſolved to continue our aſſemblies twice a week in the meadow.

I RETURN'D to Mrs. *Eliot*, who waited for me with the utmoſt impatience: She immediately approv'd the reſolution I had taken to divulge the whole to the miniſter and all the people we met; and ſhe, as well as myſelf, look'd upon it as a burden we had thrown off. She then ſaid to me, after all the apprehenſions we were under, what had we to fear from the miniſter's reſentments? What harm can he do us? Has he any power over

my daughter? I conſent to her being your wife, and who has a greater authority over her than me? But notwithſtanding theſe reflections, Mrs. *Eliot* could not forbear being uneaſy when ſhe conſider'd the miniſter's implacable temper, and the diſpute ſhe had had with him. She deſir'd me to repeat to her what had paſt between the miniſter and myſelf. This I did, and thereby increaſed her pain, as ſhe fancied his anger would be fatal to us. He had mention'd ties and promiſes, and expreſs'd himſelf in ſuch a manner, as tho' he look'd upon us as engag'd to our fictitious wives. Heavens! ſaid Mrs. *Eliot*, after muſing a moment, how could this reflection ſlip me? You'll find, ſaid ſhe, that he'll gather all his venom from that quarter, and give it all the force that hatred and malice can inſpire.

We ſpent part of the day in arguing upon this troubleſome article, and ſent out a ſervant from time to time, with orders to enquire what was doing in the village, and the conſtruction that was put upon our adventure. He return'd a little after we had ſent him out in the evening, and told us, that all the old men had met in the veſtry at the miniſter's deſire. We did not doubt but 'twas to debate upon

our

our affair, and this made Mrs. *Eliot* much more anxious; however, my *Angelica* was not in the leaſt uneaſy, but told me that love and innocence had calm'd all her fears. As for myſelf, I was fully perſuaded that Mrs. *Eliot* had too much wiſdom to be frighted without juſt grounds; I therefore concluded, notwithſtanding I had appear'd ſo calm and undiſturb'd, it would yet be proper for me to take ſome meaſures in private for our ſafety. I thought myſelf doubly oblig'd to this, as my companions had put me at their head; and accordingly I went out in order to aſſemble them. This I was oblig'd to do very cunningly; for Mrs. *Eliot* and my wife would not have ſuffer'd me to leave the houſe till ſuch time as we had heard what had been reſolv'd upon in the veſtry, had I not invented ſome excuſe. But Gods! how blindly did I run to deſtruction! I left them purpoſely to get ſuccour, when my preſence was ſo neceſſary a little after.

AT my leaving the houſe, I ſent a ſervant to acquaint my faithful friends that I was going to the place of our aſſembly, and expected them there. We had agreed upon a kind of watch-word, which was given out upon extraordinary occaſions,

and denoted that it was neceſſary for us to aſſemble immediately. They all came a little after, when I found they had alſo heard that the veſtry was met; but they did not ſeem to be ſo much affected with it, as I expected they wou'd be; however, I rouz'd them from their dangerous ſecurity, by telling them the reflections my mother-in-law had made on the miniſter's diſcourſe. Let us, ſaid I, be upon our guard, for we are engaged in a very ſerious affair. Let us tremble for the fate of our dear wives, if we are not concern'd for what may happen to our ſelves. Who knows what lengths the angry temper of the miniſter may engage the old men to go? Moſt of them are very ſimple people, who have been long uſed to follow his determinations, and have them in the utmoſt veneration. Let us now ſee what courſe we ſhall take in caſe they pretend to fall upon us publickly.

SEVERAL expedients were propoſed, ſome of which were of a violent nature; however, we thought it would be beſt to try firſt what could be done in a peaceable way. Accordingly, we reſolved to go in a body to the veſtry, and deſire to be admitted into it, hoping that a ſincere declaration of our proceedings would make

make an impreſſion on the old men, and ſerve, at leaſt for the preſent, to render all the miniſter's deſigns againſt us abortive. *Gelin* was order'd to ſpeak in our name; upon which we ſet forward. Every one of us appear'd ſatisfied with this reſolution, which indeed was the wiſeſt we could have taken; but with what prudence ſoever we had endeavour'd to conduct our ſelves hitherto, heaven had decreed it ſhould have an unhappy iſſue; and injuſtice and cruelty were to prevail over integrity and virtue. The heads of the church, the old men, our judges and our fathers, had concerted together to ruin us, and this while we were endeavouring to ſoften them by our tears.

ALAS! how melancholy is it for a perſon to have been unhappy, when he is ſentenced to bear the ſad remembrance of his pains, in the midſt of never-ending ſorrow and deſpair! It may be juſtly ſaid of me, that my felicity has ſcarce laſted above a day. Retrench from my life thoſe days which I ſpent in the hopes of poſſeſſing *Angelica*, and that rapturous night in which I had attain'd the higheſt point of felicity; whatever preceded or followed that ſhort interval of pleaſure, has been one continued ſeries of ill fortune and

miſery. The reader will now find a moſt lamentable ſtory.

As we drew near the village, we ſaw a croud of people running towards it, who ſeem'd to be invited thither by ſomething extraordinary. Tho' I was wholly wrapt up in the thoughts of the danger my wife was in, I yet did not think ſhe had any thing to do in the ſight before us. However, I ran, in order to gratify my curioſity, and getting thither before my companions, I aſk'd what was the matter. I was told that *Angelica*, and ſome other young women, had been ſeiz'd by order of the old men, and confin'd together in a cloſe priſon. I was ſtruck ſo prodigiouſly with what I heard, that I made 'em repeat it to me again. My companions being come up, enquir'd to the ſame purpoſe as I had done, and found themſelves in pretty near the ſame condition with my ſelf. They aſk'd one another, with an air of the utmoſt confuſion, what we were going to do, and how we were to begin; but as for my ſelf, I was ſo much oppreſs'd, that I was not able to open my lips for ſome moments. At laſt, embracing him who ſtood next to me; Heavens! ſaid I, my dear friends! what ſay you to this fatal ſtroke? If you love

love your wives as dearly as I do, won't you loſe your lives with me in defending them? Come along; you have appointed me your leader; you ſhall ſee me die firſt, but then don't refuſe me your aſſiſtance. Notwithſtanding this tranſport, I recollected that we had not a ſingle weapon. I did not know whom we were to fall upon, or where my wife was confin'd. I might have enquir'd, but reflecting that 'tis ſcarce poſſible for a man who is tranſported with rage to take a prudent reſolution, I thought proper to return to Mrs. *Elliot*'s, and adviſe with her before I attempted any thing farther. Thereupon I adviſed my friends to return to their ſeveral quarters; and as it drew towards evening, I made them promiſe to meet in the meadow that night, in order to a freſh conſultation. We then ſeparated, when I ran till I was out of breath. Alas! ſaid I, as I was going, I am undone; my ruin is but too ſure; but my enemies ſhall not long triumph over me: The perfidious miniſter ſhall die; he ſhall be the firſt object of my revenge. As I drew near to the houſe, I obſerv'd three men walking up and down before it, who, as ſoon as they ſaw me, came upon me. I had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of what they intended.

intended. They were three of the miniſter's agents, who waited to ſeize me; a like number were waiting for each of my companions. They ſurrounded me, and tho' I made a vigorous reſiſtance, they held me ſo faſt that it was impoſſible for me to eſcape out of their hands. So unworthy a treatment threw me into the higheſt tranſports of rage, for I was dragg'd, rather than led to priſon. As I made a great ſtruggle to get out of their hands, a great many people flock'd about us; I begg'd them to ſuccour me, by repreſenting to them the miniſter's tyranny and injuſtice; they heard me, but did not ſay a word; ſo that I did not know whether they were touch'd with my calamity or not. At laſt, they forced me into one of the inner rooms of the ſtore-houſe, where I found two of my companions. Having done this, they lock'd the door upon us and withdrew, without ſaying a word.

THE companions of my impriſonment were *Gelin*, and an *Engliſhman* whoſe name was *Johnſon*; and the three others were alſo confin'd together. *Gelin* ſeem'd to be in as great a rage as my ſelf. The firſt thing he utter'd was a dreadful oath, by which he ſwore to be revenged in a ſignal manner

manner for the injury which had been done him, and afterwards to leave the iſland with his wife, tho' he ſhould expoſe himſelf to a thouſand dangers on the ſea. I was for the preſent in too great a paſſion to condemn his reſentments; but after having eaſed our ſelves by complaints and threats, I bid him reflect how difficult it would be to execute his deſign; and that 'twould be acting much more wiſely to conſider of expedients with coolneſs. In the firſt place, ſaid I, we muſt enquire the reaſons why the miniſter and veſtry cauſed us to be ſeiz'd. Let each of us ruminate a little upon this matter. *Gelin* having a very quick thought; I am ſure, ſays he immediately, that having deſign'd to break off our marriage, as the miniſter hinted to us, they thought it wou'd be proper to ſeize us, in order to prevent our conſummating it; for they little imagine we have been beforehand with them. If 'tis ſo, ſaid I, we may ſoon put an end to it, by declaring they are our wives: but I don't ſee that this reaſon, which indeed is a very natural one why we ſhould be impriſon'd, has any relation to our wives confinement. *Gelin* cou'd not anſwer this objection, tho' he had argued juſtly enough with regard to

us;

us; ſo that as our conjectures extended but to half the truth, it was impoſſible for us to take exact meaſures. The only reſolution we adhered to was, to ſend word to the old men, or the miniſter himſelf, that we had ſeveral particulars of the higheſt importance to communicate; and then to reveal the whole of our marriage to them, and in what manner we had compleated it ſo as to render it indiſſoluble.

THIS was a neceſſary ſtep, and would undoubtedly have been ſucceſsful, had we been oppoſed by leſs ſubtle adverſaries, or our wives been more courageous; but the miniſter, when he drew up his ſcheme, had weigh'd every thing that made for or againſt it. He perceiv'd, that *Gelin* had imagin'd that the conſummation of our marriage would ruin all his meaſures; and indeed, 'twas purely to prevent it, that he had prevail'd with the veſtry to give orders for our being ſeiz'd; but as he was afraid he had deferr'd it too long, it being natural to think that a company of young perſons who had ſpent the night together, would have ſatiated their utmoſt wiſhes; his firſt care had been to get a complete confeſſion of the whole from our wives. This he had done in ſo

artful

artful and malicious a manner, that inſtead of engaging them to give a faithful account of the whole, he had on the contrary forced them in ſome meaſure to make ſuch a depoſition as favour'd his vile views. A moment after they were carried to priſon he went thither with ſome old men, who were to ſerve as witneſſes; when he began to reproach them in the moſt injurious terms, with their boldneſs in daring to diſpoſe of themſelves without their parents conſent, and the approbation of the veſtry. He gave them to underſtand, that ſuch an union as ours, ſo far from meriting the name of marriage, was an unpardonable crime. At laſt, after uſing his utmoſt endeavours to frighten them, he added, that he hoped, however, they had not done any thing which claſh'd with modeſty; nor ſo far abandon'd virtue, as to conſent to any thing indecent in the meadow. Having thus prepar'd their minds by this ſpecious diſcourſe, he then enquir'd with an air of authority, what had paſs'd between us the night before. The tender creatures were ſo much puzzled at the queſtion, that partly thro' fear, partly out of modeſty, they diſguiſed an eſſential part of the truth; and the miniſter having

having taken down all their words, he got it ſign'd immediately by the old men who accompanied him. He came from thence to the ſtore-houſe, and as he knew *Gelin* and I were more reſolute than the reſt, he reſolv'd to viſit us laſt. This increas'd our misfortunes; for our three companions whom he went to firſt, being as irreſolute as our wives, he intimidated them as eaſily, and extorted anſwers from them, that greatly prejudiced the common cauſe.

He came into our room, at a time when we leaſt expected him, and juſt as we were talking about ſending for him. 'Twas with the utmoſt conſtraint that we prevail'd with our ſelves to ſalute him civilly, and liſten with temper to what he ſaid. He was accompanied with four old men. The prejudice he had to me in particular, and the anſwer I had made him ſome hours before, prompted him undoubtedly to ſpeak to me firſt. I was ſure, ſays he to me with a fleering air, that the crime you have been guilty of would not be judg'd ſo innocent by the veſtry as you would fain have perſuaded me it wou'd. Young people are generally raſh and preſumptuous, and I ſee but too evidently, that you have all the defects which

which are incident to youth. I had ſo much temper as not to make any anſwer to this diſcourſe. He then told me that he was come, in the name of the veſtry, to hear more diſtinctly than he had done in his own houſe, the ſeveral circumſtances of our nocturnal aſſembly, and the particulars of an attempt equally repugnant to religion and good manners. *Gelin* was going to ſpeak, but the fear I was under leſt his vivacity ſhould ſpoil all, made me haſten to prevent him. Your reproaches, Sir, ſaid I, don't in the leaſt affect the juſtice of our cauſe; I hope that what we have done will be found leſs criminal by the veſtry, when they ſhall be told it by a man of greater impartiality and temper than you are maſter of. However, we ſhall not ſcruple to acquaint you with the circumſtances of our marriage, ſince you deſire it in the name of the veſtry; and what we have done is ſo far from interfering either with religion or virtue, that 'tis our glory we have not done any thing repugnant to either. I then gave him a complete and faithful account of our engagements; and above all, did not omit expatiating upon the moſt tender part of the ceremony.

He bluſh'd as I ſpoke, and when I had ceaſed ſpeaking, he turn'd about to the old men, and aſk'd them with a malicious ſmile, whether he had not reaſon to tell them by the way, that he was now going to the moſt cunning and moſt dangerous perſons of the company? I ſee plainly, ſays he, thro' all your arts, but they'll be of little advantage to you. Let me adviſe you not to aggravate your ill conduct by fraud and impoſture, but imitate the reſt of your companions, who, if they have acted as imprudently as yourſelf, are at leaſt more ſincere. As I did not underſtand well what he meant, I only proteſted to him that I would be ſincere in my anſwers. 'Tis all a jeſt, ſays he to me with an air of contempt; when taking up a pen, he writ ſomething, and got it ſign'd by the four old men. As he was writing, I aſked my two companions whether they underſtood the meaning of what he had ſaid to us. We concluded, that either our companions muſt have been over-reach'd, in caſe they had made a declaration different from ours; or that they had betray'd us, in caſe they had done it voluntarily. We intreated the miniſter to explain himſelf more clearly to us, but in vain; and he only

only read to us our declaration, which he had taken down. He told us that it agreed with that which our wives and the reſt of our companions had made; except that being more artful than they were, we had pretended, in oppoſition to their teſtimony, that we had conſummated our marriage. Theſe words letting me at once into his intention; Sir, ſaid I to him, take care what you're about; you certainly have an ill deſign, and are going to take a very imprudent ſtep. Depend upon it I've told you nothing but the truth; and that what views ſoever our wives and companions may have had in explaining themſelves after a different manner, they yet will confeſs the whole truth in my preſence. Yes, ſays he, that's after you've had an opportunity to teach them their parts, and to be as inſincere in their anſwers as you've been. Saying this he left us, without ſpeaking a word more.

'Tis now, ſays I to *Gelin*, but too manifeſt that they are endeavouring our ruin; and if we are to believe the miniſter, our wives and companions turn our own weapons againſt us. Heaven only can extricate us out of this calamity; for force will here be of no effect, and truth and juſtice will hardly be attended to in the

the veſtry. The only hopes we have left, is to appeal to a general aſſembly of the whole colony. In caſe the veſtry oppoſes ſo reaſonable a deſire, our complaints will thereby be more juſt, and more capable of exciting the pity of the people; and in caſe they indulge our requeſt, as you are maſter of ſo much eloquence, I don't doubt but that if you declare the truth of our ſtory, and diſcover the malicious deſigns of the miniſter, but you'll win over a majority to our intereſt. Tho' *Gelin* ſeem'd to liſten to me, I yet perceived that his mind was diſtracted, which ſurprized me very much, in a perſon of his vivacity. I reproach'd him for it, but he ſtill continued ſilent, and diſcover'd ſuch an abſence of thought as plainly ſhew'd he was in a deep *rêverie*. At laſt, having urg'd him to anſwer me: Yes, ſays he, I'll follow your advice with pleaſure, and we'll appeal to a general aſſembly; but then in caſe we don't meet with ſucceſs here, I've a project in view, which will be of much greater ſervice than my eloquence. 'Tis going too far, ſays he, growing ſtill warmer; the unworthy treatment we meet with is unparallell'd. 'Twas with the utmoſt ſtruggle that I imitated your temper when the miniſter

miniſter came in to us, and inſulted us ſo vilely; but I have thought of an expedient that will humble his pride, and make the colony ſtand in greater awe of us than they have hitherto done. I begg'd him to ſpeak plainer; but he told me that would be ſoon enough, when the remedy he meditated was neceſſary to be applied; but then he aſſur'd us 'twas an infallible one, and that we might depend on having our wives in our arms, and our enemies at our feet. Whatever deſign he might have, I deſir'd him to lay the thoughts of it aſide for ſome time, and prepare to defend our cauſe in the general aſſembly. The next morning we ſent our keeper to the miniſter and the principal old men, to ſignify to them that we acknowledg'd no other tribunal than that of the whole body of the colony, and therefore deſir'd they might be ſummoned together immediately. They anſwer'd that our requeſt ſhould be conſider'd; but we were ſo fully perſuaded they could not refuſe us, that it made us much eaſier. *Gelin* ſpent ſome days in compoſing his ſpeech, during which I was either reflecting on our caſe, or diſcourſing with *Johnſon* on the uneaſineſs our wives were under, and the great tenderneſs

derneſs we ow'd the dear creatures for their generous affection. They had denied the favours which love had prevail'd with them to beſtow, but then we were ſenſible it was out of love and modeſty. We even ſuſpected that the miniſter had prompted them to do this by his artful inſinuations. As for my own part, I relied ſo much upon *Angelica*'s affection, that I did not fear a change; but my greateſt anguiſh was her abſence, and the fix'd perſuaſion I entertain'd, that mine gave her the greateſt pain.

We ſpent four days in this manner, without being viſited by any perſon, and in the deluſive opinion, that we ſhould be indulg'd the liberty of juſtifying ourſelves to the whole colony. The fifth day in the morning the miniſter came in to us, attended by the ſame old men who were with him before. He now ſpoke to us with an obliging tone of voice. I am, ſays he, come to bring you better news than you could have expected: However exaſperated ſoever the veſtry and I were at your indecent behaviour, we now conſider it as a frailty which your youth occaſion'd you to fall into. We are ſenſible, that the moſt virtuous diſpoſitions, the moſt ſolid and uniform wiſdom, is ſome-

time

times the fruit of the greateſt errors: A man who has deviated from virtue is more delighted with her when he returns to his duty; we therefore forget your foibles, which we impute to heedleſſneſs and imprudence. You appeal to a general aſſembly; but you are vaſtly miſtaken in your conjectures, for depend upon it they'd have treated you worſe than we ſhall do: But your crime is of ſuch a nature that it may be judg'd by the veſtry only, and you may thank heaven that we have reſerv'd to ourſelves the cognizance of it. Hearken, ſays he gravely, to the ſentence which has been pronounc'd in your favour. He then read a paper, the ſubſtance whereof was as follows: That tho' *Guiton* had been put to death for committing a crime of almoſt the ſame nature with ours, yet the veſtry had thought proper to treat us with greater indulgence, not only in conſideration of our youth, but chiefly becauſe we were ſo lately arriv'd in the iſland, and conſequently could not be thoroughly acquainted with the laws and cuſtoms of it: That he therefore not only ſentenc'd us to receive with humility the gentle and charitable correction which the miniſter would inflict upon us publickly in the church,

and atone by three weeks confinement for the ſcandal we had given to our brethren: That after this we ſhould be at liberty to cohabit with our lawful wives, with thoſe which God had been pleaſed to appoint us by lot, and whom we had ſolemnly accepted in the preſence of heaven and earth, and promiſed to live with them in the ſtricteſt union, to behave as tender huſbands, good proteſtants, and peaceable citizens: That with regard to the ſix immodeſt young women, who had abus'd ſome advantages they had received from nature, to make us ſwerve from our duty, and engage us to form with them the moſt abominable ties, which they had preſum'd to call by the name of marriage, in prejudice to thoſe we had contracted with our only lawful wives, the veſtry would defer pronouncing their puniſhment till the next aſſembly, till when they ſhould continue in cloſe confinement, without being allowed the liberty of ſpeaking to their friends and relations. Such was the favourable decree which the miniſter pronounc'd in the name of the veſtry. Miniſter, veſtry, venerable names, ſacred maſks, which injuſtice, treachery and cruelty abus'd to our deſtruction.

I HAVE

I HAVE given very near the whole particulars of this fatal decree: However, we were not immediately ſenſible of the moſt dreadful circumſtances of it, with regard to our wives and ourſelves; but no ſooner did *Gelin* underſtand that they look'd upon the chance-marriage as a lawful one, which diſannulled the true one, but he broke out into ſuch a lamentation as oblig'd the miniſter to leave off. He immediately flew into a dreadful paſſion, and ſurely never was man in greater rage and indignation. In vain I conjur'd him to calm his tranſports, ſince it could not be of any ſervice; he was all in a flame, ſo that I might as well have ſpoke to the winds. He broke into a thouſand injurious expreſſions againſt the miniſter, and reproach'd him openly with his malice and hypocriſy, nor was he more tender of the veſtry and the whole colony; and adding threats to reproaches, he ſwore he would employ fire and ſword to defend our wives and us. The miniſter, whom this fury had at firſt diſconcerted a little, recover'd himſelf, and calling to mind undoubtedly that we were his priſoners, and therefore could more eaſily employ threats than put them execution: 'Twas undoubtedly this reflection, I ſay,

that made him ſo bold as to inſult us with the poignant raillery, which threw *Gelin* into ſuch a rage that he was going to ruſh upon him, had I not ſtopp'd him. Leave us, ſays I to the miniſter, if you have any wiſdom left, and don't force us to puniſh your treachery and inſults. He left us, and at the ſame time advis'd us with the moſt malicious air to obey the will of heaven, and the order of our ſuperiors.

GELIN was now very angry with me for checking his rage, but I repreſented to him that 'twas very happy for us I had kept myſelf from breaking out. D'ye think, ſays I, I am not as much affected as yourſelf with the indignities we have received? I was as much exaſperated as you could be at the miniſter's diſcourſe, and had I thereby expos'd my own life only, I ſhould have vented my paſſion in as furious a manner as you did; but then are we not to conſider our wives, who wait for our ſuccour? What will become of them in caſe we by our imprudence put it out of our power to defend them? They tremble undoubtedly at the danger they are in, but how greatly will their terrors increaſe when they come to hear the ſentence which the con-

ſiſtory has paſt upon them? The only refuge thoſe innocent creatures have is, our love and the promiſes we made them. They without doubt are thinking on us now, are diſcourſing upon us; and in caſe they have any hopes left, 'tis grounded on our tenderneſs, our fidelity, prudence and courage. Ah! dear *Gelin*, ſaid I, embracing him, what reſentments will not motives like theſe ſuppreſs! and can anger pretend to diſpute with love? — Notwithſtanding he for ſome time heard me with pain, I yet obſerv'd that my arguments had calm'd the violence of his tranſports. He own'd his imprudence; and as he lov'd his wife tenderly, the reflections he made on the danger to which ſhe was expos'd, melted him into tears, when he aſſur'd me that even his anger proceeded from the violence of his love. But now beginning to perceive that his rage againſt the miniſter would infallibly make our affair worſe; he then told me 'twould be time enough to employ the expedient he had before hinted to me. His deſign, as we ſhall find, correſponded with his daring and enterprizing genius.

HE had had the curioſity, a few days after his arrival in the iſland, to view the ſtore-houſe all over, when he made nice

obſervations on the order and diſpoſition of this vaſt edifice, and had taken notice that the arms which the inhabitants brought out of *Europe* were ſtor'd carefully in a room at the top of the ſtore-houſe, tho' they were ſeldom made uſe of. There were fifty or threeſcore muſkets, ſeveral piſtols, a great number of ſwords, and ſome barrels of powder. The door of the room where they were ſtor'd was never ſhut, and that of our apartment was not ſo ſtrong but we might break it open. *Gelin*, after he had made theſe obſervations, fancied that as we might very eaſily ſeize upon the arms and the powder, it would give us an opportunity not only of triumphing over the miniſter and the veſtry, and defending ourſelves againſt their machinations, but of making ourſelves maſters of the iſland. He had objected to himſelf, that as there was but three of us we ſhould ſcarce be able to go through ſo ſignal an attempt; but his fruitful invention ſoon hit upon an expedient for this. In the firſt place, we ſaw 'twas an eaſy matter for us to force our way to our companions, who were confin'd in another part of the ſtore-houſe: What reaſons ſoever we had to complain of their fearfulneſs, there was no doubt but they'd

be more courageous when they ſhould be animated by our exhortations and example; but *Gelin*'s chief hope was grounded on circumſtances of a quite different nature, and theſe he ſet in ſo plauſible a light, that I was highly delighted with his project, and found it concerted with much more judgment than I had thought him capable of. Notwithſtanding the boaſted ſeverity of manners of the inhabitants, and their zeal with regard to the obſervation of the laws and the deciſions of their old men, we are to lay it down as a principle that we have to do with men, and as ſuch they can never be able to ſuppreſs the ſenſations of nature. Our wives have relations who love them very tenderly, and therefore cannot but ſympathize in their misfortunes. Theſe relations have friends and ſervants: If we ſuppoſe that the ſix families of our wives have each four friends, and each of thoſe friends a ſervant, here are above fifty perſons on whoſe ſuccour we may depend, or at leaſt we may be ſure they won't oppoſe us. But why may we not flatter ourſelves that we, by uſing arguments and entreaties, may bring them over to our intereſts, and perhaps aſſiſt us to recover our freedom? This, ſays *Gelin*, I ſhall undertake to do, and I rely

ſo much on the eloquence you are pleaſed to compliment me with, that I don't deſpair of ſucceſs. I ſhall repreſent to them that ſo far from deſigning to do any thing in oppoſition to religion and the laws, no perſons ſhall pay a greater regard to them than us; that our only deſign is to defend ourſelves againſt the miniſter's tyranny, and obſerve inviolably our plighted oath to their daughters; that it affects their honour no leſs than our happineſs and repoſe; in fine, that we are their children, their daughters huſbands, and that we ought to have the ſecond place in their hearts. I have no notion, ſays he, of the human mind, if theſe conſiderations don't make ſome impreſſions on them. I then will reveal my deſign to them, and my opinion is, that ſo far from condemning it, they'll declare openly in our favour; and when this is done, we'll ſeize upon the iſland, the miniſter and the elders, and eſtabliſh ſuch an order as we ſhall think proper.

Every thing appear'd not only feaſible but eaſy in this project. *Johnſon* approv'd it no leſs than I did; however, we look'd upon it as our laſt refuge, and therefore were not to have recourſe to it but in the laſt extremity. *Gelin* was for putting it

in

in execution that very evening; or at leaſt, that we ſhould attempt to break out of priſon in the night, go to our wives relations, and perſuade them to take up arms in our favour. We all conſented to this. But tho' it were poſſible for us to break our door open, yet this could not be done without our keeper's perceiving it the next day. This wou'd occaſion us to be confin'd more ſtrictly, and conſequently ruin all our hopes. *Gelin* was forced to confeſs, that the ſeveral parts of his enterprize muſt be executed at the ſame time; that is, we muſt ſeize upon the powder and arms the very night we broke out of priſon. This we promiſed to do very ſoon, and only intreated him to delay it till ſuch time as we were ſure the veſtry were reſolv'd to put their ſentence in execution.

THE next day the miniſter made us another viſit, when I whiſper'd *Gelin* to keep his temper. We waited in ſilence to hear what our enemy had to ſay. He made but a very ſhort harangue, in which he ſaid with great mildneſs, that as the morrow was a day of publick prayer, on which all the colony were to meet at church, he thought we wou'd not refuſe to ſuffer ourſelves to be conducted to it, to

hear the ſentence which the veſtry ſhould pronounce upon us. We were ſo far from diſapproving this order, that we were overjoy'd to hear him mention a public aſſembly of the colony, and that we were allow'd to go to it. This was our greateſt deſire; upon which he went out, highly ſatisfied at the promiſe we had made him of going to it with joy; and indeed, we congratulated one another upon this event, which reviv'd our former hopes. *Gelin* had prepared a very pathetic diſcourſe, which he propoſed to pronounce to the people. We did not at all doubt but it would occaſion a happy change; were ſurpriz'd that the miniſter did not make that reflection himſelf, and thank'd heaven for it, looking upon it as an omen of our better fortune. But in the evening we receiv'd a piece of news which damp'd theſe tranſient ſenſations of joy; for the keeper coming in to us, took me aſide, when he told me, that for Mrs. *Eliot*'s ſake he had undertaken to put a letter from her into my hands. Here it is, ſays he; but you ſhall promiſe me never to reveal what I have now done, to the miniſter. This I promis'd to do; and was perſuaded by the fear he diſcover'd, that this fiery eccleſiaſtic had uſurp'd

ſurp'd a great power over the inhabitants, at the ſame time that he ſeem'd deſirous of eſtabliſhing a perfect equality. I open'd Mrs. *Eliot*'s letter, and ſure every line was a dagger to my heart. She began by calling her ſelf the moſt unhappy mother that ever liv'd, and then reproached me with having broke the vows I had made to her daughter. Such a report indeed had been ſpread, by the miniſter, who had put that conſtruction on our complying ſo readily to go the next day to church. But notwithſtanding the diſtracting opinion Mrs. *Eliot* entertain'd, ſhe yet diſcover'd ſome tenderneſs even in her reproaches. Cruel *Bridge!* did ſhe ſay, do you thus abuſe the tenderneſs of a mother, and a daughter's weakneſs! What harm had either of us done you? Alas! can we reproach our ſelves with any thing but loving you too well? She ended her letter with a circumſtance that was ſtill more cutting, by informing me in the moſt melancholy terms, that the veſtry had ſentenced their daughters to be expos'd at their going out of the church with different marks of ignominy; and to ſtand an hour publickly to be ſcoff'd at by all the inhabitants. O *Gelin!* ſaid I, trembling, after I had read theſe fatal

words; O *Johnſon!* 'tis now we muſt die, or ſave our wretched wives. I gave them the letter to read, during which I did nothing but weep and complain, in which they ſoon ſympathized with me. *Gelin* was in ſuch a furious tranſport, that he tore his hair from his head; when butting his head againſt the door, in order to break it open, he cry'd out, To arms! my dear friends, let's not loſe a moment. Alas! we ſhall certainly be too late. The rage he was in brought me a little to my ſelf; upon which I deſir'd him to be cool for a moment: We are now, ſaid I, at the criſis of our fate, and poſſibly our lives are at ſtake: for heaven's ſake, dear *Gelin*, don't let us ruin all by our imprudent tranſports. I'm as much concern'd in this affair as your ſelf, and would attempt any thing to ſecond, or lead you, in whatever you ſhall think proper to attempt; but let us endeavour to cool our ſelves, and take a judicious reſolution; *Gelin* cried that the only ſure expedient was to take up arms, and revenge our ſelves by the blood of our enemies. I at laſt prevail'd with him to ſtay till night; that we ſhould certainly be diſcover'd, in caſe we attempted any thing in the day-time; and that 'twas a wonder the keeper,

who

who was but juſt gone from us, had not been alarm'd at the noiſe we made. I thus prevail'd with him to deliberate on matters with greater coolneſs, and to conſent that each of us ſhould take ſome time to digeſt our thoughts, before we communicated them to one another.

ACCORDINGLY, we all three retired to different parts of the room, and ſpent about a quarter of an hour in deep meditation, the ſilence being interrupted only by our ſighs. At laſt, *Gelin* being uneaſy under this conſtraint, cried out, that we ſhou'd never hit upon ſo good an expedient as that of taking up arms, and that he wou'd not have recourſe to any other. I am, ſays I, of the ſame opinion; but as we muſt be obliged to go thro' with it when once we have attempted it; and muſt never expect to be reconciled to the miniſter and the old men, when once we have thrown off the maſk; it will be of the higheſt conſequence to us to act cautiouſly in this affair. Cou'd not we, for inſtance, arm our ſelves, and at the ſame time conceal our weapons? Thus ſhall we be ready to uſe them, in caſe we are forced to come to that extremity; and if your ſpeech ſhould happen to make an impreſſion on the people, no body will ſuſpect that we are privately arm'd. *Gelin* at firſt rejected this propoſal;

poſal; Talk not to me, ſays he, of ſpeeches or meaſures; all theſe lenitives will be of more fatal conſequence than my violent expedients. To arms! To arms! I'll explain my ſelf to morrow by fire and ſword. I let his fury take time to ſpend it ſelf, when, knowing his temper, I repreſented to him, as I really thought, that it would be infinitely more glorious for us to ſucceed by eloquence and the juſtice of our cauſe, rather than by dint of arms. The people, ſays I, will be eaſily ſtirred up. Our youth, that of our wives, our civility, and the modeſty of our behaviour ſince we have been here, all plead in our favour. I am perſuaded we ſhall triumph over all the miniſter's artifices; but 'twould be a melancholy reflection, as we have ſo much reaſon to hope we ſhall ſucceed by gentle methods, to think we ſhould make uſe of one which will infallibly ſet the whole colony in a flame, and prevent our ever being able to live in peace in it. I added ſeveral arguments of the ſame nature, which at laſt made a wiſh'd-for impreſſion on *Gelin*.

I WAS perſuaded that they were juſtly grounded, when I revolv'd them ſo much in my mind. Had the veſtry certainly paſs'd ſuch a ſentence on our wives, it would have been impoſſible for us to have prevented

prevented it, ſo that all we had to do was to hinder its being put in execution. I flatter'd my ſelf that great things wou'd be atchiev'd by *Gelin*'s ſpeech, and the kind diſpoſition of the aſſembly, part whereof were our wives relations and friends. As the ſovereign authority reſided in the body of the colony, all the ſentences of the veſtry might be annull'd in a moment. If *Gelin*'s eloquence and the juſtice of our cauſe, were not able to make us triumph over our enemies, I was reſolv'd to be the firſt who ſhou'd take up arms; and I did not doubt but one man with his piſtol cock'd, wou'd drive away a croud of defenceleſs people, who for twenty years had not heard the report of a gun. My ſcheme therefore was, that we ſhou'd force the door of our priſon in the night, and each of us arm our ſelves with two piſtols. I no longer fear'd that the keeper wou'd diſcover in the morning that we had broke the door open; but was perſuaded I was ſafe with regard to him, ſince he had undertaken to put a letter into my hands, and had conjured me ſo earneſtly not to let it come to the miniſter's ear; not to mention that he wou'd never gueſs the reaſon which had engaged us to break our door

open.

open. I therefore communicated my plan to my companions, who approv'd it, ſo that we waited impatiently for night, in order that we might put it in execution.

'Twas come. We had candles to light us, when we began to force the door, which immediately flew open. We broke it ſo artfully, that there appear'd but very few marks of our violence. We now went up to the room where the arms were ſtow'd, when we met with piſtols that were no ways ruſty; made choice of ſuch as we could eaſily put into our pockets, and took three pair for our companions. As I was viewing the muſkets and other fire-arms, which we ſhou'd be forced to leave behind us, I was thinking, the better to execute our deſign, that 'twou'd be neceſſary to find out ſome method, by which we might render all theſe arms uſeleſs to thoſe who ſhou'd attempt to employ them againſt us. My opinion was, that we ſhould ſpend the night in taking them to pieces, and afterwards hide them in ſome place where they might not be eaſily found; but *Gelin* ſpar'd us that labour. The inſtant, ſays he, that we ſhall be forced to have recourſe to arms, one of us need only fly to the ſtorehouſe, and keep

keep the door of it till ſuch time as he ſhall ſee us advance forward. We'll certainly retire to it, as to a fortreſs, ſince there is no place where our wives can be ſo ſecure. We then ſhall have, not only the arms and the powder, but likewiſe all the proviſions of the iſland; and conſequently we ſhall oblige our enemies to ſubmit to whatever we ſhall think proper to preſcribe. This hint ſeem'd of ſuch uſe, that we applauded *Gelin* highly for it. And now having prepar'd our piſtols, and taken a ſufficient quantity of powder, the only thing to be done was, how to find out an opportunity of ſpeaking with our companions. We were not only to give them their piſtols, but alſo to reproach and animate them. 'Twas an eaſy matter for us to find out the place where they were confin'd, and to ſpeak to them thro' the key-hole; but the difficulty was, how to give them their piſtols. We fir'd them to ſuch a pitch by our diſcourſes, that being no longer able to deprive themſelves of the pleaſure of embracing us, they did not ſtay till we adviſed them to force their door, as we had done ours, but they burſt it open at once. They then flew to our arms, and ſhed tears for joy. I then aſſum'd the

authority

authority of leader, with which they had inveſted me, when I reproach'd them with their meekneſs, in ſuffering themſelves to be over-reach'd by the miniſter's artifices. They excuſed themſelves by ſaying, that 'twas from the fear they had of revealing too much, by making ſuch a confeſſion as might be of dangerous conſequence. I then made them ſenſible how prejudicial their unhappy fear had been to us, when they acknowledg'd their guilt, and begg'd us to impute their faults to their good intention. I did not doubt but they were really ſincere, and intended well; but then they were of ſo heavy a diſpoſition, that I always had ſome ſuſpicion of them. This will appear but too evident in the ſequel. We left them, after having acquainted them with the particulars of our deſign, and aſſur'd ourſelves of their conſtancy and reſolution by the promiſes they again made to that purpoſe. I adviſed them to tell the keeper plainly, when he ſhould find their door broke open, that the only reaſon why they had done it, was in order to obtain the ſatisfaction of ſeeing and diſcourſing with us.

THE day which we ſuppos'd would determine our fate, beginning to dawn,

we conjur'd *Gelin* to call to mind that he was not only to defend his own intereſts, but thoſe of five dear friends, who put their happineſs and life in his hands. He did not want this advice to animate him. But now the hour for going to church was come, ſome of the old men being met at our door, in order to guard and conduct us to church, we followed them without the leaſt ceremony, and aſſum'd a chearful air, in order to prevent the leaſt ſuſpicion. I nevertheleſs was deeply afflicted in mind, not ſo much from the uncertainty of our wives and our own fate, which was now at its criſis, but from the grief I felt when I thought of Mrs. *Eliot*'s uneaſineſs. I had been tempted the night before to anſwer her letter, in which I intended to complain of her for harbouring ſuch an unjuſt opinion of me, and to aſſure her of my conſtancy; but *Gelin* and *Johnſon* had diſſuaded me from it, through the fear they were under leſt the keeper ſhould betray us. The inſtant I came into the church my eyes wander'd about for my wife, but I could not ſee her, and was afterwards told that ſhe was ſo much out of order that they could not bring her to church. We were carried into the middle of the church,

church, where the greateſt part of the inhabitants were already aſſembled. A form had been ſet for us, oppoſite to which thoſe odious creatures were to ſit that were deſign'd for our wives. They were conducted in a moment after us; we ſaluted them in a courteous manner: Our civility was taken notice of by all the aſſembly, and we could eaſily judge by the diſcontent or ſatisfaction which appear'd in their countenances, the diſpoſition of each perſon with regard to the ceremony. The miniſter appear'd ſoon after, but we were uncertain whether our dear wives were to bear a part in this odd ſpectacle, and did not dare to enquire after them. How eager ſoever I might be to ſee mine again, I did not know whether I ought to wiſh ſhe might appear in public, and before her proud rival, till ſuch time as our fate was pronounc'd; but as the miniſter began his prayer without taking any notice of them, I ſuppos'd he intended not to take them out of their confinement till the time appointed for their ignominy. The miniſter, as ſoon as he had ſaid the uſual prayers, went up into the pulpit; and now the deciſive moment was at hand. My companions were no doubt in as great emotion as my

ſelf,

ſelf, and the whole aſſembly ſeemed to be not a little mov'd. We had agreed, that in order that our caution might ſeem to be the effect of prudence and a calm reſolution, *Gelin* ſhould not begin to ſpeak till the miniſter had made an end. We were under very little apprehenſions from his diſcourſe, being perſuaded that *Gelin* would eaſily deſtroy all the arguments he might advance, and ſuppos'd that our reaſons would be approv'd as ſoon as they ſhould be laid open.

THE ſubject of the ſermon was on the duties of the married ſtate. Theſe the miniſter explain'd with great eloquence, but without making any particular application, the concluſion excepted, which was drawn up directly for us. He firſt recalled to our memories, in the moſt pompous expreſſions, the day when we, as he pretended, had plighted our faith in the ſame place, and call'd it an ever-memorable day, made ſo by the moſt auguſt, moſt holy ceremony. What fruits did not the whole colony expect to reap from it? But a wicked ſpirit, who employs its ſeducing arts, and exerciſes its tyranny over young minds, had interrupted the courſe of ſo deluſive a hope; this ſpirit had breathed an irregular paſſion

ſion into our hearts, which might have the very ſame effects as hatred, that is to ſay, diſorder, diviſion, and the ruin of that happy peace which till then had made their iſland ſo delightful. Thanks to heaven, ſays he, the evil was check'd in the beginning; but they had run the greateſt danger, and 'twas owing to Providence that it had been ſuppreſt in its infancy, and brought us ſo ſpeedily back to our duty, that 'twould ſcarce be imagin'd we had ever ſwerved from it. I ſhould have excus'd the miniſter, had he only mention'd our marriage as a fault, and our ſilence as a mark of repentance; but he did not ſtop here; for upon pretence of treating us with gentleneſs, and to be tender of our welfare by extenuating his fault, he found means to ſatisfy the hatred he bore to Mrs. *Eliot* in the moſt artful manner. He obſerv'd, that one might eaſily perceive by our air and behaviour that Providence had indulg'd us a moſt excellent nature, and that we ſhould not have ſtruck into the paths of error, had we either had no guides at all, or ſuch only as were virtuous and faithful. But what man, tho' ever ſo prudent, can reſiſt the artifices and inſinuations of a woman, loſt to all virtue, who

makes

makes it her whole ſtudy to ſeduce him? Dangerous ſex! capable of running into exceſs of every kind when once they deviate from modeſty and virtue! Tho' he did not name Mrs. *Eliot* after this zealous declamation, he yet hinted at her ſo plainly in ſpeaking of thoſe weak mothers who ſhare in the frailties of their daughters by a criminal indulgence, and too often by their advice, when their age does not permit them to do it any longer by example; that the whole aſſembly diſcover'd, by a murmuring ſound, that they underſtood the drift of his ſatyr, and diſapprov'd it. Mrs. *Eliot* poſſeſs'd a thouſand good qualities: Such an accuſation as that the miniſter had brought againſt her, made at random, and without the leaſt grounds, produc'd an effect quite different from what he expected; for it mov'd the whole aſſembly to compaſſion for a woman of ſo much virtue, who was ſo vilely us'd in her abſence, and poſſibly diſpos'd the people in our favour. Tho' I eaſily perceiv'd that things were turning for our advantage, and look'd upon it as a happy omen, I yet had a great ſtruggle before I could prevail with myſelf to hear this injurious diſcourſe out before I diſcover'd my re-

ſentments. In the firſt emotions of my indignation I put my hand to one of my piſtols, and ſhould very poſſibly have forgot that I was in a church, had I not recollected that I ought, for Mrs. *Eliot*'s ſake, to calm my tranſports.

When the miniſter had done ſpeaking, and ſeem'd ready to come down, in order to conclude the ceremony, which he ſuppos'd us ready to comply with, *Gelin* began to ſpeak with great modeſty; You'll be ſo good, Sir, ſays he, as to give me leave to add a word or two to your excellent harangue, and that I myſelf acquaint the aſſembly with my ſentiments, and thoſe of my companions. So new and unexpected a ſcene occaſion'd a confus'd murmur, every one endeavouring to draw near, and diſcovering a ſurprize equal to their curioſity. *Gelin*, ſo far from being diſconcerted at it, was the more encourag'd; and his voice and geſtures were ſo adapted to his diſcourſe as agreably captivated his hearers. I adviſ'd him to get upon the bench we ſat upon, in order that he might be the better heard. His preamble was very plain and ſimple, but this ſimplicity was very artful: He firſt declared, that his deſign was to lay before the colony the ſeveral cir-

circumſtances of our behaviour ever ſince we had been in the iſland, perſuaded, ſays he, that in caſe we happen to have been guilty of any indecorum or frailty, our age and innocence will procure us the favour of the inhabitants rather than their ill-will. This ambiguous manner of preparing his auditors had the wiſhed-for effect: it prevented the miniſter's putting a ſtop to his diſcourſe, becauſe, as it concealed from him our real intentions, he fancied it would ſecond his deſign, and that nothing but repentance could have extorted from us a confeſſion of our faults; nor was it leſs ſucceſsful with regard to the inhabitants, for as it left them in doubt whether we were going to oppoſe or ſubmit to the ſentence of the conſiſtory, it prevented their forming thoſe prejudices which generally ariſe for or againſt a perſon accus'd, when he profeſſes himſelf to be innocent, or acknowledges himſelf guilty; and *Gelin* was perſuaded, that by making an impreſſion afterwards on their hearts, he ſhould intereſt them in our behalf by an artful and pathetic declaration of the juſtice of our cauſe, and the malice of our enemies. He then related in the moſt ſincere manner the reflections we had firſt made on the cere-

mony of caſting lots, the firſt time it was propos'd to us, the conferences we had afterwards held on that important article, the diſinclination we had to obey it, and at the ſame time the reſolution with which we thought ourſelves oblig'd to conceal our inclinations, purely to give the colony a proof of our docility, and the reſpect we had for it. He confeſs'd, that to this motive was added ſome hopes that heaven would reward our ſubmiſſion, and direct the chance in ſuch a manner as was agreable to our deſires; that this reflection had ſupported us till the inſtant the ceremony began, and that our ſincerity was apparent by the eaſy and undiſturb'd air with which we came into the church; but that thoſe who examin'd our countenances diligently, might eaſily perceive a great damp upon our ſpirits; that as the deſigns of providence never declare themſelves more ſenſibly than by thoſe involuntary emotions, we had interpreted them in the moſt natural ſenſe, that is to ſay, as a token that heaven allotted us thoſe women, for whom it had ſuddenly inſpir'd us with the ſtrongeſt affection; that we had flatter'd ourſelves for ſome moments that fortune would confirm this diſpoſition,

but

but that having found it contrary to our wiſhes, it was not in our power to ſuppreſs the impreſſions chance had firſt made on our hearts; that we had attended to the reſt of the ceremony againſt our inclinations; that ſo far from once thinking to form any engagement with thoſe women whom fate had allotted us, that had it not been for the great reſpect we had to the aſſembly, we never could have prevailed with ourſelves to ſalute them, which was the only mark we reſolved ever to give them of our eſteem; that we had ſufficiently declared our ſentiments by the delay we had ſo much inſiſted upon, and with which we ſeem'd to be ſo much pleaſed when it was granted us. To this *Gelin* added, that as marriage ſuppoſes the conſent of the will, we therefore might look upon ourſelves as free at our coming out of the church; that we had always argued on that hypotheſis, and that having met immediately after the ceremony was over, in order to deliberate on the common cauſe, we had ſo little notion that it could be ſuppos'd we were engag'd, that this article had not ſo much as once been debated upon; that we had been checked only through the fear we were under of diſpleaſing the

inhabitants, in caſe we ſhould diſpoſe of ourſelves otherwiſe than they intended; but that fear was ſoon over-balanced by hope, when we conſidered that we had not been brought out of *Europe* to be made wretched; and that as religion, mildneſs, and equity were characteriſtics peculiar to the whole colony, he hoped they would never force us to do any thing againſt our inclinations. Our orator aſſur'd the aſſembly that 'twas on this foundation we had form'd the plan of an innocent artifice, by which we did not ſo much intend to impoſe upon the inhabitants, as to ſpare both themſelves and us a multitude of uſeleſs arguments, which would only have ſuſpended the completion of our deſires. He then related what each of us had done in order to ſucceed in them; the difficulties we had been oblig'd to ſurmount before we could make our wives liſten to our paſſion; the arguments we employ'd to prove they might indulge it without offending modeſty; the order, and the prudent and virtuous meaſures we had taken the night we ſolemniz'd our marriage; and laſtly, he repeated the very words of the oath by which we had bound ourſelves to them, which I before acquainted you was ex-

preſs'd in the ſtrongeſt and moſt binding expreſſions. I obſerv'd that his ſpeech began to work upon the audience in our favour; and as he was now entring upon the moſt affecting part of the diſcourſe, I did not doubt but he would at laſt win over the whole aſſembly.

AND indeed, changing the ſimple and irreſolute view in which he had hitherto ſpoke, he ſoon made his auditors ſenſible that eloquence is the gift of nature, independent on age or profeſſion. His geſtures, his attitude, his eyes, every part of him was expreſſive: He was griev'd, he was melted, in ſhort, he ſeem'd to feel alternately the ſeveral paſſions he endeavour'd to inſpire. He did not break into invectives againſt the miniſter, but then he repreſented his malice in very lively colours, and ſtrongly oppoſed to it our ſincerity and innocence; he gave ſo moving a deſcription of the beauty of our wives, their virtue, their modeſty, and the violent paſſion we had for them; in a word, he gave ſo odious a turn to the violence which had been employ'd againſt us, and above all, to the ſhocking ſentence which had paſs'd upon our dear unhappy wives, that the moſt barbarous ſavage muſt have been touch'd

with his diſcourſe. Laſtly, as tho' he were recover'd from his tranſport, Alas! dear brethren, ſays he, with a tender and pathetic air, you who ſeem touch'd with our calamity, and the anguiſh we feel, ſhall we not merit your compaſſion! To you our innocence flies for refuge; to your tribunal it appeals: We have not here either tender fathers or affectionate brothers, whoſe ſuccour we may invoke: we have abandon'd them purpoſely for the ſake of living with you: if we have any refuge left, 'tis in thoſe who are friends to juſtice and virtue. Alas! were we not aſſur'd that every good quality prevailed here? Is not this the peaceable ſeat where we were promis'd ſo much happineſs? What other motive had we to leave our country than the hopes of leading a calm and virtuous life among you, and of being inceſſantly prompted to laudable actions by your example? Are the ſweets we were flatter'd with the hopes of enjoying, reproach, impriſonment, violence, and the deep anguiſh of ſeeing what we love deareſt torn from our arms? Alas! d'ye think the forcing them from us was not a mortal blow? D'ye believe we could ſee this and not reſolve to ſpend the laſt drop of blood

in

in their defence? No, no, don't imagine they ſhall be raviſh'd from us, or we tamely ſubmit to the ignominy that is prepar'd for them: This barbarous ſentence ſhall never be put in execution till the laſt drop of blood trickles from our veins. Be not aſham'd to kill us, if you do not bluſh to diſhonour our dear wives: by that action the malice of our enemies would be triumphant. But why ſhould you dip your hands in our blood? What prejudice, what injury have we done you? In caſe our integrity, and the laſting affection we have for our wives, give you umbrage, give us leave to depart from your iſland, we'll fly away with the companions of our fortune; we'll ſeek ſome climate where conſtancy and fidelity are not look'd upon as criminal. Give us only a little bark; we don't deſire either ſails or a rudder: love and virtue will chear our ſouls in the midſt of the wide-extended ocean; we don't want any other guides. Dear brethren, do not reject our entreaties or tears: You now have heard what we requeſt, we either deſire death, or the liberty of going to ſeek it, in company with our wives, in the vaſt ſea which ſurrounds your iſland.

'Twas high time that *Gelin* ſhould end his diſcourſe; for the murmurs which were now ariſing in the aſſembly would not have ſuffer'd him to be heard, and every one ſeem'd to be griev'd for ſome perſon who was dear to him. Every one began to ſpeak with great warmth, and tho' no one could be heard diſtinctly, 'twas very evident the aſſembly were for us. I ſtill kept near *Gelin*, when I ſaid to him, your diſcourſe has made a happy impreſſion; but in caſe you don't ſay ſomething to prompt the people to ſpeak openly for us, I'm afraid no one will dare to do it. *Gelin*, who could expreſs himſelf upon any ſubject without premeditation, immediately cry'd; I ſee, dear brethren, that heaven does not abandon our innocence, ſince it inſpires you in our favour, as is evident from your countenances: But remember 'tis not enough to pity us, unleſs you indulge us your ſuccour. You are ſenſible that the ſupreme authority reſides in your aſſembly; won't you annul the cruel ſentence which has been paſt upon our wives, and reſtore them to their liberty? Scarce had he utter'd theſe words, when the words *liberty*, *liberty*, *the ſentence is null*, were heard in every part of the church. The

in-

inexpreſſible joy we felt on a ſudden made us for ſome time ſo loſt to reflection, that it occaſion'd our committing an irreparable overſight. Wholly wrapt up in the reflection on the happy deliverance of our dear wives, we forgot to take the advantage of the favourable diſpoſition of the people with regard to us, and intreat them to confirm the validity of our marriage that inſtant. The miniſter obſerved our overſight ſooner than we did, and made it ſubſervient to his malice: He was very much diſturb'd all the time *Gelin* was pronouncing the latter part of his harangue, and when the people were for having our wives reſtor'd to us. As every individual ſeem'd to favour us, he did not dare to open his mouth, or even diſcover the leaſt diſcontent; but when he obſerv'd we had overlook'd that article of our happineſs, which he had the greateſt deſire to deſtroy, I mean our marriage, he immediately put it out of our power to mention any thing on that head, by diſmiſſing the aſſembly. Go, ſays he to the people, let not thoſe poor young women continue any longer in priſon, ſince you have thought proper to give them their liberty. Every one was eager to run and take them out of their confine-

ment; and we were ſo inconſiderate, that we did not then attend, as we ought to have done, to the circumſtances and the neceſſity of our affairs.

ALL the people were now gone out of the church, except the miniſter and the members of the veſtry, when we perceiv'd, but too late, the overſight we had committed, and were bewailing it whilſt the miniſter was diſcourſing with the old men. As he had kept us back from going with the reſt, we ſuppos'd he had ſomething to ſay to us; but we were far from thinking he intended to commit us again to priſon. Had we been unarm'd, we undoubtedly ſhould have been the ſtrongeſt, ſince we had not to do with above a dozen or fifteen old men. 'Twas this very reflection prompted us not to oppoſe the order the miniſter gave, for our being remanded back to priſon. I only deſir'd to ſpeak one word to my companions: We have acted, ſays I, very ridiculouſly, in forgetting the article which was moſt eſſential to our happineſs; but as matters now ſtand we ſhould be much more ſo, did we refuſe to return to the ſtore-houſe. We muſt hope that we ſhall one day recover the opportunity we have now loſt;

and ſince we have obtain'd our wives liberty, and got their ſentence aboliſh'd, we ought to conſider our return to priſon as a trifle. *Gelin* cou'd hardly be of my opinion. I can't, ſays he, think what views the veſtry can have in committing this freſh piece of injuſtice. The ſame, ſaid I, they had before; that is, to prevent our having the leaſt correſpondence with our wives. 'Tis plain that their firſt ſentence, which relates to our marriage, continues ſtill in force, and that they intend to put it in execution. But come, ſaid I, taking him by the hand, and follow me on the word I give you, that our confinement will not be of the leaſt prejudice to us. *Gelin* rely'd ſo much upon what I ſaid, that he came forward; the old men ſeem'd very well pleas'd with our eaſy compliance, and ſome of them guarded us to the ſtore-houſe.

WE were confin'd in the ſame rooms. The keeper had that morning found we had forced our doors open, and being ſatisfy'd with the excuſe we made him, he had got it mended. Tho' we might eaſily have procur'd our liberty in the ſame manner we had done before, whenever we ſhould think proper; I yet ſuppoſed the old men would not refuſe us leave to ſee

our companions, in caſe we deſired it in a civil way. They indeed granted our requeſt, and accordingly order'd the keeper to give us that ſatisfaction once a day for a certain time which they limited. I was very impatient to tell them the reaſon why they were not to look upon our return to priſon as an evil. You muſt know, ſaid I as ſoon as I had an opportunity of ſpeaking to them, that I have thought of a new project; I flatter my ſelf that you'll approve of it, becauſe tho' it be ſlow in executing, the ſucceſs of it will be certain, and may eaſily be obtain'd. The miniſter affects to believe that we have not conſummated our marriage; and 'tis probably by his communicating this circumſtance to the veſtry, that he ſo eaſily prevail'd with them to pronounce our divorce. Why ſhould we take ſo much pains to undeceive them in this article? Won't this truth ſoon diſcover itſelf? Let us conſtrain our ſelves ſo far as to ſuffer three or four months impriſonment; 'tis ſcarce poſſible but one of us ſhould produce ſuch fruits as will exhibit themſelves before ſix months come about. If one of our wives ſhould be with child, this will undoubtedly ſufficiently perſuade the miniſter that we have really had a correſpondence

dence together; and he muſt be the moſt wicked wretch breathing, ſhou'd he after this pretend to ſeparate us. Thus, ſaid I, let us ſet our hearts at eaſe, and reſt aſſured that things will ſoon change to our advantage. The pangs of abſence will be more cutting to me than to any of you; but then will not hope ſoften the deepeſt anguiſh? You may indeed make one objection, which is, that we ſhall be urged to put the ſentence which the veſtry has paſt, in execution; but here we need not fear they will employ violence. They may prevent our cohabiting with our dear wives, but they will never pretend to force us to live with women whom they know we deteſt. In caſe they ſhould enquire into the reaſons of this, we will wave giving them in a civil manner; and then let 'em put what conſtruction they pleaſe upon the matter.

My companions were ſo pleas'd with this hint, that they thank'd me a thouſand times for it. *Gelin*, tho' of a fiery temper, applauded it, notwithſtanding he was already tormented at his wife's being kept ſo long from him. In reality, the notions I declar'd above were juſt, and ſeem'd to promiſe ſucceſs; but the ſame evil ſtar which had hitherto oppoſed my happi-

happineſs, was preparing to complete my ruin. The advice which I had given my friends for the common cauſe, prov'd ſo fatal, that heaven ſeems to have puniſhed it as a crime, in cauſing all the ſad effects it produced to fall upon me.

NEVERTHELESS, the little probability there was of its proving ſo inauſpicious, having made our companions receive it with joy, we began to put it in execution that very day. We mention'd our confinement to ſome of the old men who came to viſit us, as a circumſtance which was ſo far from putting us to any pain, that we aſſur'd them we ſhould willingly ſpend ſeveral months in it. They enquir'd the reaſon of this, but we wou'd not ſatisfy them, and anſwer'd only in a ludicrous way. We acted the ſame part with regard to the miniſter, and all thoſe who were allow'd to viſit us. Not a week paſs'd but ſome perſon or other of the conſiſtory came to teize us about ſubmitting to the ſentence which the veſtry had paſt, but they all return'd with the ſame anſwers. The perplexity this gave them was a great ſatisfaction to us; however, they could not pry into our deſign; and as moſt of them were old men, who boaſted great wiſdom and experience, they

they cou'd not conceal the uneaſineſs they felt, to ſee all their cunning baffled by a few young fellows. We were not ſo reſerv'd with regard to our wives; our firſt care was to acquaint them privately with our intentions, both to prevent their entertaining any ſuſpicion with reſpect to our fidelity, as well as to deſire them to act in concert with us, and not omit acquainting us immediately, ſo ſoon as they ſhould have the ſymptoms we wiſh'd might appear. The keeper, who differ'd very much from the generality of his brethren, conſented to do us that favour. I writ every day to Mrs. *Eliot* and my dear wife, and my heart was at eaſe when it breath'd its pangs upon paper. I alſo uſed to receive their anſwers. The moſt tender, the moſt paſſionate expreſſions of love and friendſhip were employ'd in this delicious correſpondence, which for five months was my only conſolation! Our keeper indulged my companions the ſame favour. We always ſhew'd one another the letters we ſent, and the anſwers we receiv'd; for the friendſhip which united us was ſo ſincere, that we diſguiſed our thoughts as little as we did our actions. Every one of us laid open his heart, and ſaw into thoſe of his companions, whom

he

he conſider'd as his dear brethren and faithful friends. They did not let us want books, or any thing that might divert us. The *Engliſh* employ'd themſelves chiefly in learning the *French* tongue; and the *French* in improving themſelves in ours. In this manner did we draw a conſiderable advantage from our captivity; but alas! I was never allow'd to apply it to the uſe I intended. My chief view in ſtudying the *French*, was in order that I might be better able to breathe in words, the paſſion I had for my dear, dear wife; but alas! I was doomed never to ſet eyes upon her more.

Scarce were three months paſt, when Mrs. *Eliot* ſent me the joyful news that *Angelica* was with child, which ſhe aſſur'd me was certainly ſo. We celebrated a kind of feſtival upon that account in our confinement. My companions congratulated me upon the likelihood there was that I ſhould firſt become a father; and they looked upon this indulgence of Providence as a confirmation of the little authority they had given me over them. We debated whether it wou'd not be proper to acquaint the veſtry with it; and they were all unanimous that we ſhou'd. I only differ'd in opinion from them; I begg'd

begg'd them ſo earneſtly to acquieſce with it that at laſt they did, but 'twas purely out of complaiſance, for I had not one good reaſon to give them, nor even my ſelf; but I was actuated by a blind inſtinct, or a ſecret foreſight which I my ſelf cou'd not account for. I thought it wou'd be dangerous for my wife to be a mother before her companions. I was yet uneaſy only upon her account; I fancied that 'twas merely owing to a regard I had for her modeſty and virtue, that made me willing to defer publiſhing her being with child, till ſuch time as her companions were in the ſame caſe with herſelf. What reaſon ſoever we had to believe that the people favour'd us, I know that a glance, a mark of ſurprize, the moſt innocent and inoffenſive raillery, ſtrongly affect a virtuous woman, who happens to be in a condition which ſhe is told people did not expect to find her in; and my deſign, ſo far as I was capable of judging of it my ſelf, was to ſecure my dear *Angelica* from every ſubject of uneaſineſs and confuſion. The reader will perhaps think, that this reaſon, tho' ſo random a one, might alone have prompted me to the reſolution I fix'd upon; but 'tis certain 'twas a little better grounded. This I felt, tho'

I was

I was not able to expreſs it; 'twas ſome remains of the happy influence of my ſtar, which preſaged ſome impending ills, tho' I could not gueſs what they were to be. How indeed wou'd it have been poſſible for me to foreſee them, ſince nothing but the moſt deteſtable malice could have given them birth; and that I my ſelf, tho' I felt them, cou'd ſcarce perſuade my ſelf that they were real?

I THEREFORE told Mrs. *Eliot*, in my anſwer, that I believ'd it wou'd be proper to conceal my wife's pregnancy, till ſuch time as thoſe of my companions had diſcover'd ſomething of the ſame nature. Several weeks paſt in this expectation, but without hearing the news I ſo earneſtly deſir'd. In the mean time, the miniſter and veſtry, who were more and more puzzled how to find out the motives of our conduct, and had done their utmoſt to force the ſecret from our breaſts, were again extremely urgent with us. Sometimes they wou'd employ the moſt gentle perſuaſives, to incline us to obey their injunctions; but generally made uſe of menaces and reproaches. The miniſter eſpecially, who frequently viſited us, never left us without uſing the opprobrious names of ſilly and rebellious creatures; and

and telling us we might juſtly fear ſome ſevere chaſtiſement both from heaven and the colony, which would force us to our duty in ſpite of our ſelves. 'Twas one day after he had vented himſelf in the moſt injurious terms, that loſing all patience to hear him run on in this manner, I inconſiderately reſolv'd to tell him plainly, that 'twas to no purpoſe for him to talk to us. Wou'd you, ſaid I to him, have me marry two wives? This I'll conſent to, in caſe it be for the advantage of the colony; but if you cannot object any crime to me, don't talk to me any more of quitting *Angelica*, who is ſo truly my wife, that ſhe's now far advanced with the fruits of our marriage. He was ſo much ſtruck at theſe words, that he obliged me to repeat them thrice before he could underſtand my meaning. I explain'd it ſo far as he deſir'd. And have your companions, ſays he to me, after being ſilent a moment, have they been guilty of the ſame crime? I anſwer'd with a ſneer, that we were aſſociates in virtues and vices, and that we all expected the ſame rewards or puniſhments. Upon which he withdrew, without declaring his thoughts. Tho' I had made this confeſſion inconſiderately, I yet did not find any

any room to repent of it; and my companions, who wiſh'd earneſtly that this might happen, were overjoy'd at it. We were now in the fifth month of our confinement, and were no longer to depend upon their wives being with child, ſince they had not yet had any tokens of it. The hopes we had entertain'd for five months, were now confin'd wholly to *Angelica* and my ſelf; and we were impatient to know what turn the veſtry and the reſt of the colony would give to ſo indiſputable a proof as I had now given the miniſter of my marriage with *Angelica*. I wrote immediately to Mrs. *Eliot*, to prepare her in this matter, and ſhe ſent me an anſwer to it the ſame evening. It gave me ſome pleaſure, ſhe informing me that ſhe had been viſited by the miniſter, who had deſir'd to ſee my wife; that he had enquir'd into the truth of her pregnancy, and having been convinced of it, he had left her with an apparent air of ſatisfaction.

But the next day we were ſupriz'd to find ourſelves guarded by another keeper, and that greater care was taken of the priſon-gate than before. We enquir'd the reaſons of this of our new goaler, but to no purpoſe; and the only

anſwer

anſwer he made us was, that 'twas done by order of the veſtry. We then did not doubt but the other was ſuſpected of carrying letters to and from our wives; but this firſt hardſhip was no more than a prelude to what was to follow. The hour being come which we uſed to be allowed to viſit our companions, the keeper told us it would no longer be allowed us, and he obſtinately refus'd to tell us why we were treated with ſo much ſeverity. This could not but make us very uneaſy, and we held a conſultation thereupon, but were not able to unfold the myſtery: That 'twas not out of indulgence we were ſo ill us'd was manifeſt; but then what could they pretend by this freſh inſult? Admit that my wife's being with child was made a handle, how were we become more guilty ſince the miniſter's having certified himſelf of the truth of it by his own eyes, than when I had aſſur'd him of it five months before? 'Tis true, indeed, that he had always pretended to ſuſpect my ſincerity, but 'twas that very reflection removed all the ſuſpicions I might have harbour'd of his cruel deſigns, and had even hitherto made me conſider his injuſtice as inexcuſable. He perhaps, ſaid I, is perſuaded that we intend

tend to impoſe upon him; the only thing wanting is, to aſſure him that our marriage is conſummated; for the greater love he bears to his niece, the leſs probable it is he would force ſuch a huſband upon her as would be a diſhonour for her to accept of, ſuppoſing it will be poſſible for me to prove the favours I received from my *Angelica*. They are now prov'd beyond diſpute; after this he will never admit me for his niece's huſband, and conſequently he will no longer be prompted to break thoſe eagagements which bind me to my wife. This reaſoning would have been juſt, had the miniſter acted the part of a tender uncle, and a virtuous and charitable paſtor; but his only vices were, like the moſt cruel and inſidious enemy, to ſatisfy his reſentments againſt Mrs. *Eliot*, her daughter and my ſelf; and this was the ſole motive of all his outrage. My companions had not ſhar'd with me in them, had it been poſſible for him to have deſtroy'd me without involving them in it: Revenge was his only paſſion, or at leaſt all the reſt were made ſubſervient to it. Mrs. *Eliot* was well acquainted with his character when ſhe gave me ſo juſt a deſcription of it; and 'twas with reaſon ſhe ſaid he had been

ſo

ſo active in putting his ſiſter-in-law to death, purely that he might revenge himſelf of *Guiton*, whom he could not ruin without making her ſhare in it. This villanous action is worthy of his injurious treatment afterwards; for I don't relate any thing of this odious eccleſiaſtic which the ſequel will not evidently confirm.

The difficulty we had to dive into his deſigns oblig'd us to have recourſe to the uſual conſolation of the wretched, I mean patience, and the invoking heaven. Tho' I had no manner of notion of the danger which threaten'd me, I yet could not forbear being very uneaſy upon *Angelica*'s account: The dear creature was ever preſent to my imagination: What a wretched fruit was this of ſo tender, ſo innocent an affection! She undoubtedly, ſaid I, feels great anxiety upon my account, whilſt I am trembling leſt any evil ſhould have befallen her! Which of us is moſt worthy of pity? Alas! I am ſenſible that the deepeſt pangs I feel are not my own; but I am tortur'd for thoſe of *Angelica*. We continued a month more in this cloſe confinement, and received three or four viſits from one of the old men, who exhorted us in general to hope for the beſt; but we could never prevail on him to tell

us

us why we were ſo barbarouſly treated, he refuſing to anſwer the queſtions we made him with regard to our wives. *Gelin*, who was moſt enrag'd at this uſage, propos'd to me more than once that we ſhould employ our piſtols as the only remedy left to put an end to all the inſults we had received. We had not only our own piſtols, but thoſe of our companions, which we had thought proper to take from them; becauſe as our room was larger and more commodious, we conſequently could conceal them better. I anſwer'd *Gelin*, that we were not abſolutely to neglect this reſource, but that I did not yet ſee there was any neceſſity for having recourſe to it; that we ought at leaſt to ſtay till ſuch time as our fate was pronounc'd, and not act the part of men in deſpair till we had loſt all hopes.

We had now been confin'd near ſix months, when one morning the miniſter and ſeveral of the old men came into our apartment in a ſeeming perplexity. Withdraw, ſays the miniſter to *Gelin* and *Johnſon*, and leave me alone with Mr. *Bridge*. My dear companions went out, attended by the old men, and indeed left me alone with my enemy: He bid me ſit down, with a very haughty air, and ſeating himſelf,

ſelf, he put two queſtions to me at one and the ſame time: Who are you, ſays he? and with what views are you come into this iſland? Surpriz'd at the contemptuous tone in which he ſpoke to me, I gaz'd upon him for ſome time without being able to utter a ſyllable; upon which he again aſk'd me the ſame queſtions. I was determin'd to ſatisfy him in a civil manner, but to let him know at the ſame time that I was capable of ſome reſolution. Tho' I know not, ſaid I, with what deſign and by whoſe order you aſk me theſe queſtions, if you don't know yet whom I am, I ſhall inform you: Know then that I am ſon to the *Lord Protector* of the commonwealth of *England*. As to the motive which brought me into this iſland, 'twas in hopes of meeting with juſt and virtuous men; grant heavens I may not be deceived in my expectations! This was far from being an uncivil anſwer, but nevertheleſs he reproach'd me for it, as tho' it ſhew'd a want of reſpect. His hatred vented itſelf at firſt only in opprobrious words, but afterwards aſſuming a leſs angry air, I can hardly, ſays he, believe that man who has been guilty of ſuch crimes as you have committed, can be

the ſon of ſo great a man, or that you have the leaſt ſpark of honour and virtue, ſince you've violated all the laws of it; but if, ſays he, you really believ'd that the inhabitants of this iſland love order and juſtice, I now come to aſſure you of it, by informing you that guilt is here puniſh'd with the utmoſt ſeverity, and that you yourſelf will be an example of it. We don't ſuffer either adulterers or ſeducers to live among us: A huſband who breaks his vows with his wife deſerves death, and you ſtand already condemn'd by the laws. However, as the colony only have the power of ſentencing a man to death, you yet may entertain hopes that they'll perhaps mitigate it; but then don't depend too much upon this, ſays he, with a diſdainful air, but think of making your peace with heaven; for the people have proſecuted, with the utmoſt vigour, perſons who were leſs criminal than you are. I was for juſtifying myſelf, or rather I was in ſuch confuſion, that when I attempted it, I ſcarce knew what I was going to ſay; but he ſtopt me, and deſir'd I would ſuſpend my juſtification till ſuch time as perſons were nominated to examine me. He added, as he roſe up, that he had been

been ſent to viſit me merely in his miniſterial function, that is, to exhort me to repent, and to make a Chriſtian uſe of chaſtiſement, ſaying which he left me. My companions did not return again; but in a moment the keeper and two men came in, who throwing themſelves upon me, fetter'd and handcuff'd me, as tho' I had been the vileſt criminal.

I MUST confeſs that my courage and reſolution could not bear me up againſt the violent impreſſions which ſo unexpected an accident made upon me. I ſaw 'twas all the miniſter's doings: Immediately *Guiton*'s tragical end preſented itſelf to my imagination: I thought myſelf doom'd to certain death, and ſpent above an hour in bewailing my fate, and exclaiming againſt Providence. But when this firſt anguiſh of my ſoul ſomewhat abated, I began to reflect that *Angelica* would infallibly be involv'd in my ruin, and undergo the ſame puniſhment. This loſt me the little reſolution I till then was maſter of, and I had like to have died with grief, and thereby have diſappointed my enemies of the cruel pleaſure they flatter'd themſelves with, *viz.* of making me ſuffer ſtill longer. My ſoul was in ſuch diſtraction that I ſcarce had the

power of uttering a word; yet 'twas impoſſible to keep my deſpair from breaking out: I attempted to ſpeak, to cry aloud, and vent my woes in words; ſome indeed broke from me, but they were interrupted with ſighs: I addreſt them to *Angelica*, to Mrs. *Eliot*, and my companions, and I call'd heaven and earth to bear witneſs to the torments I felt.

My amiable wife, whoſe name, notwithſtanding my rage, melted me whenever I repeated it, was at this time in as deplorable a condition as myſelf, but this I was not inform'd of till ſeveral months afterwards. How afflicting ſoever the uncertainty of my fate might be to me, it yet would have been very much aggravated, had I then known the pangs ſhe ſuffer'd. My generous friend *Gelin* was the firſt that inform'd me of it, who at the ſame time told me the treatment my companions had met with, and every thing that had happen'd to them from the time we had been ſeparated; but this I ſhall relate afterwards.

By the character I have given of the miniſter, and his thirſt for revenge, one may eaſily gueſs who occaſioned my being treated ſo barbarouſly, and the miſery into which I was ſuddenly plunged. Now

liſten to the horrid ſcheme he had form'd. I had no ſooner inform'd him of *Angelica*'s being with child, but he went immediately to Mrs. *Eliot*'s, as was before related, in order that my wife her ſelf might confirm the truth of it. After this he went to all my companions wives, and managed ſo artfully as to prevail on them to confeſs indirectly they were not in the ſame caſe with *Angelica*. He now thought he had completed his utmoſt wiſhes, and was at liberty to ſatiate his revenge. His victims had given themſelves up into his power, and he now reſolv'd not to meddle any farther with my companions, but to point all his malice at *Angelica* and me. By the ſentence of the veſtry, the ceremony of caſting lots was to be look'd upon as a holy and ſolemn marriage; now ſince then I had carried on a criminal correſpondence with another woman, I was therefore in *Guiton*'s caſe; that is, I had committed adultery, and conſequently deſerved death. Such were his arguments. He foreſaw that my companions, eſpecially *Gelin*, might prove an obſtacle in his way, by confeſſing themſelves guilty of the ſame crime; but as he had already found means to perſuade the old men, that this confeſſion was a

mere trick; he imagined he might eaſily confirm them in the ſame opinion, by making them obſerve, that 'twas not probable when ſix young fellows had had a criminal correſpondence with as many young girls, that one of 'em only ſhould prove with child. This indeed was ſo peculiar a circumſtance that I my ſelf cou'd ſcarce account for it; and I ſtill look upon it as an undoubted proof that ſome malicious power directs my fate, and even changes the uſual courſe of nature to make my deſtruction certain.

How infallible ſoever this project might appear to the miniſter, he yet conceal'd it in his boſom till the ſixth month of our confinement. His only aim in this delay was to verify more ſtrongly that *Angelica* and I were the only guilty perſons. The only caution he took was to make our confinement ſtricter, in order that I might not ſuſpect his deſigns, or attempt, in concert with my companions, to fruſtrate them. During a month that he kept us in this confinement, he affected, in public, not to believe that *Angelica* was with child. God forbid! would he ſay, that ſuch wicked ſcenes ſhould again be acted in the colony! The fatal end of *Guiton* and my ſiſter-in-law will I hope for ever keep

keep our maidens within the bounds of modeſty and virtue. He aſſumed this hypocritical behaviour for ſome weeks, but at laſt my wife's pregnancy being viſible to all the world, he threw off the maſk on a ſudden, and aſſembled the veſtry, when he made an artful ſpeech, which exaſperated the members of it ſo much againſt me, that there was ſcarce one of them but was willing to vote for my being put to death. His envenom'd eloquence had chiefly two articles for its object; firſt, to prove our pretended marriage by lot, and the juſtice of the veſtry in confirming it by their ſentence: ſecondly, to deſtroy the belief which ſome of the veſtry might entertain that my companions were as criminal as my ſelf, ſuppoſing I were ſo; and to perſuade them that I only was guilty of adultery. The conſequence of the firſt article was, that I was guilty, and deſerved to be puniſhed; and the ſecond took from me all hopes of pardon; for when many are accomplices in guilt, mercy is often ſhewn them, but when one perſon only is impeach'd of a crime, he generally is made an example of; and 'twas natural to think, after the treatment *Guiton* had met with, a young fellow like my ſelf, without friends, and unpa-

troniz'd, cou'd little expect favour. The miniſter obſerv'd, that beſides the clear and evident proof which might be drawn in favour of my companions from *Angelica*'s only being with child, there were other teſtimonies of their wiſdom and innocence; that thoſe who had been confin'd apart from me, had firſt denied their having committed the leaſt indecency with the women they pretended they had married in the meadow; that they had made this firſt depoſition voluntarily, and without being conſtrain'd to it; that as they had changed their note after they had ſpoke to me in church, 'twas manifeſt I had ſollicited them to it; that 'twas equally plain thoſe who had been confin'd with me had follow'd my directions in every thing; that foreſeeing the ill conſequences of the criminal correſpondence I had carried on with *Angelica*, I had found 'twou'd be impoſſible for me to extricate my ſelf, but by endeavouring to increaſe the number of the guilty; and that I had been ſo cunning as to perſuade my companions that our intereſts were inſeparable; that the young women had alſo differ'd in their depoſitions; that in their confinement they proteſted they had never once ſwerv'd from their duty; but that the inſtant they were

were free, that is, ſo ſoon as I by letter had taught them what to ſay, they had talk'd after a quite different manner; that he had intercepted ſome of mine or my companions letters; and that they were written in ſuch malicious and dangerous terms, that he therefore prevailed with the veſtry to change our keeper. In a word, the miniſter employ'd on this occaſion all that the moſt inveterate hatred cou'd inſpire, in order to make us odious to the people; and indeed, his diſcourſe had all the ſucceſs he propoſed. From that moment the old men conſider'd me not only as a wretch who was convicted of adultery, but alſo as the contriver of all that I and my companions had acted; and blaming me wholly for the reſiſtance they met with from them, they look'd upon me only as guilty.

We may now ſuppoſe that they thought me unworthy of life; and indeed, they were unanimous in this opinion; and tho' ſeveral perſons in the aſſembly, who had a friendſhip for Mrs. *Eliot*, wiſh'd that her daughter might meet with ſome indulgence, yet her cauſe was ſo ſtrongly interwoven with mine, that 'twas impoſſible but ſhe muſt undergo the ſame fate with me. Beſides, no one would have dared

to ſollicit for her in preſence of the miniſter, ſince he had been ſo active in proſecuting his unhappy ſiſter in the ſame circumſtances. Her deſtruction and mine were therefore reſolved upon; but as the veſtry were not impower'd to paſs ſentence of death, they contented themſelves, according to the eſtabliſh'd cuſtom, to reduce the ſeveral articles of the miniſter's charge under different heads, and expoſe them to public view. 'Twas the cuſtom, on thoſe occaſions, to fix a kind of declaration on the church door, containing the crimes with which the priſoners were charg'd. Theſe every man examin'd, that after full information he might be enabled to give his opinion; and this being done, all the inhabitants of the iſland uſed to meet, proclamation being firſt made for that purpoſe, when they proceeded regularly to pronounce ſentence. From that day, my wife and I were look'd upon, if not as criminals already convicted, at leaſt as perſons impeach'd, whoſe guilt was ſo notorious and certain, that our condemnation ſeem'd inevitable, and were both of us treated accordingly. *Angelica* was forced away from her mother's, and confin'd in a gloomy place; and as for my ſelf, I was loaded with chains, and order'd

order'd by the miniſter to prepare for death. As for my companions, who were juſtified in ſome meaſure by the pretended crimes which were laid to my charge, they were ſet at liberty. The miniſter was anſwerable for their behaviour; and as he was reſolv'd to ruin me, he told the veſtry that as they would now no longer be depraved by my counſels, they might depend upon their prudence and docility. Such were the preludes to the fatal ſcene that was preparing.

WHEN *Gelin* and *Johnſon* were ſet at liberty, they cou'd not conceive the reaſon why I was ſtill confin'd. Theſe two friends, who lov'd me dearly becauſe we had ſo long been companions in ill fortune, cou'd not conceal the uneaſineſs they felt, when I was excepted out of the pardon which was indulged them; and indeed they diſcover'd it publickly the very ſame day; but how were they exaſperated when they heard that my wife had been ſeiz'd! and that, both of us having been pronounced capitally guilty by the veſtry, they waited only for the aſſembling of the colony, in order to put their ſentence in execution! Upon this, *Gelin* ran immediately to the miniſter, when he ſpoke to him in ſo reſolute a tone as quite diſ-

concerted him; and giving him to underſtand, that what veneration ſoever he might have for the veſtry and the colony, yet nothing in the world ſhould ever make him abandon me in my diſtreſs; he told him plainly, that before he attempted to take away my life, he muſt put it out of his power, to ſacrifice his in my defence. The miniſter, who fancied that my companions would be ſo overjoy'd to find themſelves ſet at liberty, that they wou'd value but very little what became of me, was forced to employ all his rhetoric to ſoften *Gelin*. He own'd to him, that the veſtry had come to reſolutions, with regard to me, which were not very favourable; but added, that it would be a conſiderable time before they wou'd be put in execution; and that what turn ſoever things might take, he might be ſure that ſentence would not paſs upon *Angelica* till after ſhe was deliver'd; that the veſtry and colony might very probably change their reſolutions before the time came; in a word, that my cauſe was not deſperate. This anſwer was true in part; for they cou'd not pretend to condemn *Angelica* to die, nor me conſequently, before ſhe was brought to bed; but all the miniſter's aim in this was, to ſoften *Gelin*'s anger

anger juſt for a time, thinking that it wou'd be a very eaſy matter for him afterwards to win over him and his companions, by a pretended ſhew of kindneſs, or impoſe upon them by his artifices; and finding that what he laſt ſaid had made ſome impreſſion on *Gelin*, he thence took occaſion to let him know, that his own and his companions good behaviour wou'd contribute more than any thing elſe to the recovery of my liberty.

GELIN had a fault which is common to all ſincere and generous men, I mean *a mind incapable of harbouring diſtruſt and ſuſpicion.* He had juſt been ſet at liberty, and the miniſter had not forgot to aſſure him, that he was obliged to him for it. This circumſtance, heightned by a ſpecious appearance of goodneſs and moderation with regard to me, made *Gelin* think that he was not our enemy; that he had given him the beſt advice, and conſequently that his following it wou'd be of the higheſt ſervice to me. *Gelin* won *Johnſon* and the reſt of our companions to his opinion; upon which they all reſolv'd to conſtrain themſelves ſo far, as not to complain of being debarr'd ſeeing their wives; or in caſe they ſhou'd be again urged to marry the women they abhorr'd.

abhorr'd. They afterwards declared from time to time, but in the mildeſt terms, that they cou'd not yet reſolve upon marrying them; and they waited continually on the miniſter and the veſtry, in order to procure my releaſe. I can't ſay whether it had been better for me, had they acted in a quite different manner; but 'tis certain that the miniſter was not to be wrought upon by mildneſs and civility; and it only gave him an opportunity of abuſing their credulity, by winning them inſenſibly as he had propoſed, and at laſt making them to be perjured with regard to their wives, and unfaithful to their friend. I ſpeak only of three among them, for *Gelin* and *Johnſon* might be impoſed upon, but they had ſouls equally abhorrent with mine to falſhood and infidelity.

'Twas my three other companions, whom I have not yet nam'd, that my ſubtle enemy was now reſolv'd to ſound: Two of them were *Engliſhmen*, whoſe names were *Blackmore* and *Green*, and the third a *Frenchman*, call'd *Rouſſel*. I never knew directly by what arts he impos'd upon them; however, I don't doubt but that 'twas rather from fickleneſs of temper than for the ſake of intereſt that they were alienated from us.

They

They were compelled to viſit continually the women they intended for their wives, and at the ſame time were forbid the ſight of thoſe who were really ſuch: they were for ever exhorting them to have the fear of God before their eyes, and endeavouring to prove that they could not break their firſt ties. A new paſſion, a weak ſcruple, and the miniſter's continual ſollicitations, made them forget what they ow'd to their honour and their oaths. They at laſt yielded to what they had ſo long been prompted to in vain, and growing fond of the wives that were given them, they no longer had any regard for their companions. This was what the miniſter chiefly aim'd at, as was plain from the caution he employ'd when he married them; for being afraid of *Gelin* and *Johnſon*, whom he had always found inflexible, he perform'd the ceremony in private, for fear they ſhould put a ſtop to it by their complaints, and the reproaches they might caſt on their weak friends. For this reaſon they did not hear a word of their marriage till ſeveral days after it was concluded; or rather till they diſcover'd it by the confus'd air and behaviour of our three falſe friends. *Gelin* could not forbear reproaching them

for

for it in the ſevereſt terms, and treating them with the utmoſt contempt and indignation; but this had no other effect but to exaſperate them to join with our enemies againſt us.

WHAT a triumph was this for the miniſter! and indeed he was not long before he reaped the fruits of it. Having found that nothing could ſtagger *Gelin* and *Johnſon*'s conſtancy, he thought that as he now had ſet them at variance with their companions, they were too inconſiderable to have any regard ſhewn them; and accordingly, inſtead of uſing them with gentleneſs, as he had done before, he reſolv'd to treat them with ſeverity. Upon his being told that *Gelin* had broke into ſeveral injurious expreſſions when he heard of the marriage of our companions, he took an occaſion from thence to talk to him in the ſharpeſt terms, which plainly ſhew'd what he was to expect afterwards, and that they were reſolved not to ſpare him. However, his great love and affection for me made him ſubmit patiently to this inſult. He has ſince told me, that he himſelf had wonder'd how it were poſſible for him to bridle his temper ſo much, for he never had ſo ſtrong an inclination to uſe the miniſter

ter as he deſerv'd: But the friendſhip of this generous *Frenchman* had ſoon a more juſt, but a more unhappy ſubject to exerciſe itſelf upon, and which engag'd him to venture his life, in the boldeſt manner, to defend mine. As I was more ſtruck with his generoſity than the ſervice he did me, I muſt confeſs that the obligations by which he has bound me are ſo great, that tho' I were to ſhed the laſt drop of my blood, I yet could never repay them ſufficiently.

BUT now *Angelica* was deliver'd, while unhappy I was languiſhing in priſon, and groaning in chains! Alas! I was not told till now of her being impriſon'd; but ſcarce were her throws over, when the miniſter, who believed he might now throw off all reſtraint, aſſembled the veſtry, and preſt them to execute their firſt reſolutions. I have already obſerved, that my wife's being with child had ſerved as a pretence to ſuſpend it. Tho' *Gelin* and *Johnſon* did all that lay in their power to ſoften the old men, they were ſtill inflexible, and accordingly they reſolved to fix, the next day, on the church-door a paper containing the crimes I was accus'd of, and the judgment of the veſtry. *Gelin* heard nothing of it till he read the fatal writing

writing above-mention'd: The moment he read that it was levell'd at my wife and I, he tore it down, which being immediately told the miniſter, the veſtry met upon it. After ſome debates, they thought it would be beſt not to puniſh it, and make as tho' they knew nothing of the matter. An aſſembly of the whole colony was appointed, who accordingly met a few days after in the church; but as the miniſter ſtood in great fear of *Gelin*'s eloquence, and was perſuaded that he would uſe all his endeavours to procure my releaſe, he therefore got the veſtry to draw up an order, by which my companions were forbid appearing at church on the day ſentence was to paſs upon me, and gave particular orders to the wardens not to let them in. In the mean time *Gelin* and *Johnſon* did their utmoſt to gain me the people's favour, and to excite their wives friends and relations to exert themſelves in my defence. Their endeavours were fruitleſs, and the only anſwer which was made them was, that the law was expreſs, that my crime was fully prov'd, and that as *Guiton* had been made ſo ſevere an example, it was not fitting I ſhould be ſpar'd. As to the objection which might naturally

rally be made in my favour, *viz.* that I thought myſelf truly married to *Angelica*; and that even ſuppoſing the validity of the marriage which was made by lot, I yet was guilty of but one error, ſince I had never look'd upon it as valid: to this objection I ſay they anſwer'd, that 'twas a trifling excuſe, ſince three of my companions had juſt before ſhewn, by marrying the women who were deſtin'd for them, that they were not inſenſible to their former engagements, and that 'twas probable I muſt have as deep a ſenſe of it myſelf, tho' I acted ſo differently. Thus did the vile conduct of theſe three falſe men contribute more than any thing elſe to my ruin. *Gelin* has nevertheleſs told me ſince, that they might eaſily perceive by the manner in which the people refus'd to hear his earneſt entreaties, that the miniſter had prejudiced them againſt me, and that he had for three months endeavour'd underhand to eraſe out of their minds all the ſenſations of pity they might entertain in my favour.

AT laſt, the day of meeting being come, my trial was brought on regularly: My wife's confeſſion and mine were read, the depoſitions of the witneſſes taken,

taken, and my caſe was laid open by one of the old men, when the people declaring that they had heard enough, they afterwards gave their voices, according to the uſual method. Above two thirds were againſt me and my unhappy wife, for we were both comprehended in the ſame ſad ſentence, and accordingly we were declared guilty of *Guiton*'s crime, and condemn'd to die the ſame death. Execution was order'd next day, and in order that this dreadful ceremony might end in a manner worthy the whole procedure, the miniſter made a pathetic diſcourſe, in which he proteſted he had the utmoſt compaſſion for me, and exhorted the aſſembly to take warning by my ſad fate.

Now what do you imagine were my thoughts, while my life and that of my dear *Angelica* were conſpir'd againſt? Alas! I flatter'd myſelf with the hopes of meeting with a milder fate: My deluſive hopes were grounded on my having been ſo long confin'd, and the humanity of the inhabitants, whom I did not yet take for a ſett of barbarous and mercileſs people. I hardly had been viſited by any perſon except the miniſter during my three months impriſonment. When he firſt viſited me he behav'd in a moſt haughty

haughty and ſevere manner, but he aſſum'd a placid behaviour latterly: His cruel joy aroſe undoubtedly from the reflection that I ſhould ſhortly be condemn'd to die; and I, on the contrary, ſuppos'd it to be an omen of my happy deliverance. This opinion made ſo ſtrong an impreſſion on my mind, that I had refrain'd for ſome days from abandoning myſelf to groans and wailings, which hitherto had prey'd continually upon me, and even the thoughts of my dear, dear wife, whoſe idea, which was for ever in my mind, had made me ſhed ſo many tears, now preſented itſelf to my imagination under a leſs mournful form. I ſhall ſee her again, ſays I to myſelf; I ſhall be permitted to ſee her again, and love her tenderly. Deareſt *Angelica!* fate will no longer oppoſe the moſt tender, the moſt innocent paſſion that ever warm'd a lover's breaſt: I ſhall enjoy thee in peace, and ſpend the reſt of my time in thy arms. Thus, while they were ſentencing me to a cruel death, I fed myſelf with fond notions of fantaſtic happineſs: I was the ſport of that malicious power which doom'd me to be unhappy from my birth, and has preſerv'd my life purely to make me a ſad example of wretchedneſs and woe.

THE

THE ideal ſatisfaction which this gave me was more than balanc'd by the ſorrows I ſuffer'd before the day was ended. It was now about duſk, when I heard a dreadful thundering at my door; upon which I ran towards it to liſten, when methought I heard *Gelin* crying, with a furious and melancholy tone of voice, open the door, or I'll murder you. The great noiſe I heard made me ſuppoſe that there were ſeveral perſons along with him; and I wondered very much how it would end. The door flew open, when I ſaw *Gelin* and *Johnſon*, my dear friends and faithful companions, come in, who immediately embrac'd me in the moſt tender and affectionate manner. They were followed by fifteen men, ſo that the room was full: Their preſence, and the marks they gave me of their friendſhip, agreed ſo well with the agreable ideas I had entertain'd myſelf all the day with, that I was perſuaded for a moment that they brought in the news of my releaſe. Tell me, ſays I, claſping them faſt, am I free? Are you ſo? How does my dear wife do? A ſigh or two which fell from *Gelin* before he anſwer'd me, denoted but too plain that he had no good news to tell me. Alas! my good friend *Bridge*,

ſaid he with a melancholy voice, I'm going to pierce thy heart. I know thee, and am going to ſtrike thee dead; and then, without giving me time to anſwer, he added, that my condition was ſo wretched, he was forced to acquaint me with it. You are, ſays he, ſhedding ſome tears, ſentenc'd to die to-morrow, you and your dear *Angelica*. All I can do for you is, to defend you to the laſt drop of my blood, aſſiſted by our worthy friend *Johnſon*, and theſe fifteen brave men. We have not one moment to loſe, and at leaſt let us die like men of honour.

'Tis impoſſible for theſe words to ſtrike you as they did me: *Gelin* would have knock'd off my fetters, and carried me out along with him: No, no, ſaid I, puſhing him from me with a trembling hand; no, dear *Gelin*, I'll be ſpeedily inform'd of all the misfortunes which have befallen me. For heaven's ſake don't conceal any part of them from me: If *Angelica* is to die; alas! But don't hide one circumſtance, ſays I, interrupting myſelf; in caſe ſhe be already dead, I need go little farther to die. He then told me in few words part of my wretched condition, and the little hopes I had left if I did not immediately follow his in-

inſtructions. He inform'd me that my wife had been happily deliver'd of a ſon, and that my enemies were ſo barbarous, as ſcarcely to defer ſentencing her to die with me till ſhe was deliver'd. This reflection, added to the horrors of her condemnation and mine, fill'd me with ſuch deep pangs as ſurely never mortal felt before. My heart was at one and the ſame time a prey to tenderneſs and rage: I was tore to pieces by one, and ſo much melted by the other, that I burſt into a flood of tears as I embrac'd my dear friends. Theſe tranſports were ſo violent that they ſtruck me dumb; rage would not ſuffer my tenderneſs to expreſs itſelf, and tenderneſs ſeem'd to check all the expreſſions of my rage.

JOHNSON and *Gelin* melted with compaſſion to ſee the exceſs of my grief and deſpair: They forc'd off my chains, and told me their deſign, which was, that we ſhould furniſh ourſelves with weapons out of the ſtore-houſe, that we ſhould reſcue *Angelica*, and then go to our wives houſes, and take them along with us. After this, we were to go back to the ſtore-houſe, which we ſhould keep as a fortreſs, and not lay down our arms till the colony ſhould grant us a free pardon.

pardon. When I firſt thought of the project, ſays *Gelin* to me privately, I did not intend to treat our enemies with ſo much moderation, but had I not promis'd it, theſe perſons wou'd not have afforded us their ſuccour. Let us go, my dear friends, ſays I, now beginning to take a little breath; let's go, and ſecure all we hold dear in the world. As for our enemies, ſays I in *Gelin*'s ear, we'll revenge our ſelves in ſome manner or other upon them. I indeed had form'd a ſcheme, by which I ſhould have puniſh'd the miniſter ſufficiently, in humbling his pride and haughtineſs; for notwithſtanding I was ſo highly exaſperated, I yet cou'd not think of revenging my ſelf any other way on an eccleſiaſtic. My deſign was, to force him out of his habitation, carry him to the ſtore-houſe, and there oblige him, for ſeveral days together, to kneel down before us, and be a ſpectator while we indulged in tenderneſs to our wives. As I was very well acquainted with his temper, I knew that he wou'd rather have choſen death, than ſubmit to this puniſhment.

WE immediately arm'd our ſelves, and took each of us a piſtol, a muſket, and a ſword, when marching out in good or-

der, we left three men to guard the ſtore-houſe. Scarce were we come out, when we heard a confuſed noiſe, as though the people were aſſembled. We did not doubt but 'twas upon our account. My companions called to mind that they omitted one particular, which might be very prejudicial to us; and that was, they had forgot to ſecure the goaler at their coming into the ſtore-houſe. We therefore ſuppoſed that he had told the miniſter and old men the forcible manner in which *Gelin* and his company had entred the priſon; and that the inhabitants having been inform'd of it, were in the utmoſt fear and ſurprize. However, as this was no reaſon for us to lay aſide our deſign, we advanced forward. Being got about twenty yards farther, we ſaw the miniſter coming towards us with a torch in his hand, with about a hundred men at his heels; and that which ſurpriz'd us moſt, was, that moſt of them were armed with ſticks, ſhovels, and ſuch like inſtruments. I muſt confeſs, that upon the firſt ſight of my enemy, I had a great mind to ſhoot him, and thereby put an end to his villany and treachery; and I queſtion whether heaven wou'd have puniſhed me for this crime, ſince it wou'd in

all probability prevent this wicked man from committing many more. I nevertheleſs ſuffer'd him to live, and thereby expos'd my ſelf again to his perfidy. Tho' he advanced in the boldeſt manner, he nevertheleſs was in a fright when he ſaw himſelf oppos'd by ſo many men armed with ſwords and muſkets. The people who were along with him were as much terrify'd as himſelf. *Gelin*, juſt as I was going to vent my reproaches, began to mortify him, which he did in the ſevereſt manner. Stand, wicked wretch, ſays he, preſenting the end of his piece towards him, and thank heaven that thou art fallen into the hands of people who are honeſter than thy ſelf. Thou deſerveſt to be put to that death which thou hadſt determined to make my friend ſuffer. We will let thee live, in order that thou may'ſt be thy own tormentor; for life muſt be a burthen to a wretch who has ſo many crimes to reproach himſelf with. However, if thou art fond of it, thou muſt begin this moment to atone for thy guilt. This diſcourſe, which one would have imagin'd muſt either terrify or exaſperate him ſtill more, did not produce either of theſe effects. He had time to recover himſelf as *Gelin* ſpoke; and being perſuaded

ſuaded, from what he ſaid, that we had no deſign upon his life, he had ſo much preſence of mind as not to diſcover any emotions either of fear or anger; upon which he anſwer'd *Gelin*, that he could not conceive why he was treated in that cruel manner. I did my endeavour, ſays he to him, to procure your liberty, and was ſucceſsful; and the reaſon why I did not indulge your friend the ſame favour, was becauſe juſtice, our laws, and the ſentence of the veſtry and colony wou'd not permit it. But there's a conſiderable diſtance between condemnation and execution; and tho' it be appointed to morrow, that's only a matter of mere form, and it may very poſſibly be ſuſpended. In a word, tho' there was no avoiding our condemning your friend to die, he yet may be pardon'd now ſentence is paſt upon him. I muſt confeſs, ſays he, that I was very much ſurpriz'd you did not ſue for a pardon; and ſo far from being diſpleaſed at the attempt you have made to get him releas'd, I my ſelf aſſure you, that I'll join with your endeavours to obtain it. As for your companions, I mean ſuch of our inhabitants as are now arm'd with you, I confeſs that it will be difficult to excuſe them. This is ſuch an unparallell'd

attempt

attempt as can never be pardon'd; and as for my own part, I declare, that by vertue of my miniſterial function I cut them off from our communion, in caſe they don't this moment lay down their arms. I foreſee, ſays he, what will be the conſequence of this, directing himſelf to them; we're going to pardon *Bridge*, and you may probably be puniſh'd in his ſtead. Tho' you ſhou'd eſcape puniſhment, you plainly ſee that your reputation wou'd be blaſted for ever; but there is ſtill room left for repentance, ſo let me adviſe you to carry back your arms to the ſtore-houſe.

THIS ſubtle ſpeech was the cauſe of our ruin; it indeed brought the miniſter to condign puniſhment; but what advantage cou'd the puniſhment of a wicked man be to a ſett of unfortunate wretches? Our irreſolute companions having conſulted together for a moment or two, reſolv'd to return to the ſtore-houſe, in ſpight of all our entreaties to the contrary. This threw *Gelin* into the utmoſt tranſports of grief: We muſt not now, ſays he, ſuffer our ſelves to be deluded by new artifices; we muſt either die, or be victorious in our enterprize. I approv'd of the motion, when *Johnſon*, he and I,

ſtanding cloſe together, and ſhewing by our poſture that we were reſolved no one ſhou'd come near us, we went on towards the place where my wife was impriſon'd. The miniſter uſed all his endeavours to ſtop us, by repeating his treacherous promiſes, but to no purpoſe. We anſwer'd as we were going on, that nothing but death cou'd put a ſtop to our deſign; and that before this could be done, more blood would be ſpilt than ours.

THIS was our fixt reſolution, in which we were more and more confirm'd as we advanced forward. We were now come within forty yards of the place where my wife was confin'd. In our way we met with a great many people who were running up and down, as in a publick alarm, but as no one oppoſed us, our hopes of ſucceſs ſtill increaſed. We had now gone about three fourths of the way, when we heard a great many people running behind us. Halt, ſays I to *Gelin*, we are purſued. Tho' we had no other light than that of a few candles, which ſome women who were in a great fright held out at their doors, we yet could ſee fifteen or twenty men, who came up to us in a moment. We eaſily imagin'd that their arms were thoſe our deſerters had carried, which the miniſter had

had bid them ſeize upon. They now bid us halt, and lay down our arms. We'll ſooner, ſays *Gelin*, die a thouſand deaths. The firſt that advances a ſtep farther is a dead man. Our pieces were indeed cock'd, which made them afraid of coming any nearer; whereupon they adviſed us to yield, and to conſider that they wou'd over-power us with numbers. But we were as regardleſs of their exhortations as of their menaces, ſo that we kept our ground in the ſame poſture, till the miniſter came, who ſoon appear'd at the head of his men. He ſtill held his torch in his hand, and as moſt of his followers had taken ſome in their way, 'twas in an inſtant as light as day. The miniſter, whom numbers had now emboldned, and exaſperated to find us ſtill in a poſture of defence, call'd his followers a pack of cowards, in being afraid of three young fellows. This reproach made them advance boldly. Since 'tis ſo, cries *Gelin*, ſtepping forward towards the miniſter, have at thee. Upon which he fir'd at him, and wounding him mortally, he drop'd. *Johnſon* and I fir'd alſo, and wounded ſeveral men; and thereupon drawing our ſwords, our enemies ruſh'd upon us, and tho' notwithſtanding we

made a furious reſiſtance, they yet ſeiz'd and diſarm'd us; which being done, ſome of the old men who were then preſent, order'd us to be carried immediately to the ſtore-houſe, where we were impriſon'd in different apartments. I had time to ſpeak only a word to my companions as they were forcing them away: Farewel, ſays I aloud, brave *Gelin*; farewel, dear *Johnſon*; may your generoſity and friendſhip be fatal to me only! 'Twill however be a great conſolation to me in my dying moments, to think that I had two ſuch faithful, ſuch generous friends.

And indeed, I cou'd expect nothing but a ſpeedy death, not ſeeing any poſſibility of avoiding it. Accordingly, I prepar'd my ſelf for it, with all the reſolution I was now capable of. But with what difficulty did I obey the orders of heaven! Sure never were emotions ſo like thoſe of the deepeſt deſpair! but was ſure I merited pardon. Was it poſſible for a wretch to be more unfortunate than I? Whence can a man draw any arguments for patience to ſupport himſelf againſt the moſt cruel of all evils, when he has reaſon to accuſe heaven no leſs than men? Such was my dreadful condition. I conſider'd that Providence had refuſed me the advantages

vantages which it grants to all, except a very few, ſuch as thoſe of birth, a father's tenderneſs, and the ſmiles of fortune; and life, in the manner it was granted me, was not ſo much a favour, as a fatal and poiſonous gift. Had men uſed me with leſs ſeverity! Alas! call back all the ſad circumſtances of my life. Torn from a mother's arms in my infant years; depriv'd of her endearing care, by an accident, the bare reflection of which fills me with ſhame and horror; brought up afterwards in a dreadful cave, where all the objects round me were mournful, and rais'd the moſt gloomy reflections in my mind. I was eager to ſee my father; I was in raptures at the thoughts of it; when alas! he became my deadly enemy, who was forced to commit a violence upon himſelf before he could be induced to ſpare my life; and who when he allow'd it me, was reſolv'd to make it as miſerable as poſſible. At laſt I eſcaped from his cruelty, and have ſome hopes of a change in my wretched fortune. But what is the effect of the promiſe which was made me, of meeting with happier days? Only to multiply the cauſe of my ſorrows, and make me find the moſt cruel torments in thoſe very

things which create the felicity of others. Love, friendſhip, all things are converted to poiſon and tortures, when I am the object. A whole colony, that profeſs'd virtue, become barbarous and inhuman, when I am to be made unhappy. A tender and innocent paſſion is look'd upon as a crime; a holy marriage is conſidered as adultery; I am ſentenced to die; and the only two friends who indulge me their aſſiſtance in my diſtreſs, are involv'd in my ruin.

WHAT man had reſolution enough to bear up againſt ſuch dreadful reflections! But hitherto my complaints were only againſt the cruelty of fortune; faint ſorrows when I compar'd them to thoſe of love! I was to loſe my inchanting *Angelica*; the thoughts of which by my death was a more cruel torment than all thoſe my enemies were preparing for me; but when I reflected that ſhe was ſentenced alſo to die, to ſee her perhaps expire before my eyes; my *Angelica!* my dear, dear wife! all that my ſoul held dear! Oh! my torments were inexpreſſible, and ſure no one ever felt ſuch before! I figur'd to myſelf the dear creature in chains alone and inconſolable, and expecting death, which ſhe look'd upon as

un-

unavoidable; and as I was ſenſible that ſhe had a moſt tender heart, I was fully perſuaded that ſhe did not ſo much bewail her own misfortunes as mine. She then, would I ſay to myſelf, is weeping for me; ſhe deplores my death, and perhaps dreads it more than her own; and I am denied telling her the deep anguiſh I feel, telling her that I adore her only, and that ſince ſhe is ſentenced to die, I would deſpiſe the moſt glorious fortune that ſhould keep me from dying with her. I again repreſented her to my imagination, languiſhing, weak, and not recover'd from the pangs of delivery: When theſe dreadful ideas preſented themſelves to my fancy, neither the dictates of religion, or the approach of death, could endue me with reſolution ſufficient to reſiſt them. Cruel miniſter! barbarous people! What would I ſay? Does not a ſweet creature of ſixteen, a tender and innocent creature, whoſe only crime is the loving me, and being lovely, inſpire you with ſome compaſſion for her numberleſs ſorrows? Are you men? Are you fierce wolves or tygers, that thirſt for blood? Cruel proteſtants! Is this the tenderneſs and humanity your religion inſpires? Go back to your reſpective countries, which you pre-

tend to have abandon'd for the ſake of truth; be there Turks, Idolaters, and don't violate the holy laws of nature, which are the moſt ſacred and inviolable.

THUS did I ſpend the night in theſe heart-breaking reflections, in which the unhappy Mrs. *Eliot* was not forgot. She lov'd me with a mother's tenderneſs before I could claim it in quality of her ſon, and I was certain that my death would afflict her almoſt as much as that of her daughter. Could I at leaſt but thank her for her indulgence! Had I been allow'd to ſee her once more, and to beg her pardon for the ruin I had brought upon her family! Alas! ſo ſoft, ſo tender a woman as ſhe cannot have long bore up againſt ſuch an uninterrupted ſeries of woe: Grief and tears muſt have brought her unhappy old age to the grave. The mother, the daughter, and the ſad fruits of our marriage, are undoubtedly all dead. I no more flatter myſelf with the hopes of ſeeing again what is ſo dear to me: Before this cou'd be brought about, heaven muſt work a miracle in my favour, and a miſerable wretch like me is not to expect any.

THE day which ſucceeded this dreadful night was the laſt I expected of my

life and that of *Angelica*. Tho' I was very much afflicted upon *Gelin* and *Johnſon*'s account, I yet could not think they would be ſo cruel as to put them to death for reſcuing me: 'Twas probable they would not go thoſe lengths unleſs the miniſter happen'd to die of his wound. I thought the wound was not mortal, particularly as he ſtood ſo firm after his riſing up. 'Twas ſome conſolation to me, if I could receive any in this deſpair, that my friends were not expoſed to ſo much danger as myſelf. I now expected the fatal moment when I was to be carried to execution. The goaler bringing me ſome ſuſtenance, I refus'd to take it, as being of no uſe, ſince I had ſo little time to live. I call'd upon heaven to aſſiſt me, and my moſt tender wiſhes were for my dear wife: I endeavour'd to make her execution familiar to my imagination, in order to leſſen, if poſſible, the tortures which the ſight of it would fill my ſoul with; and ſuppoſing that we ſhould ſuffer together, as *Guiton* and his miſtreſs had done, I figur'd to myſelf the terrors of the inſtant when we ſhould be thrown into the ſea together. I conſider'd whether I could not by ſome means or other ſuccour my wife, bear her up in my arms

in

in the midſt of the waves, convey away the dear creature, carry her to ſhore, and by that means preſerve her precious life; or at leaſt contribute to make death more tolerable, and employ myſelf till the laſt gaſp in ſoftening the dreadful horrors of death, by the moſt paſſionate aſſurances of my love. Thus did I ſpend the whole day, without being viſited by any perſon. Surely the effects of love are vaſtly aſtoniſhing: I felt a kind of impatience till the executioners came to ſeize me; 'twas not that I began to conſider death in a leſs horrible light, but the ſtrong deſire I had to ſee *Angelica*, made me forget that the moment this exquiſite pleaſure would be indulg'd me, I ſhould be inſtantly depriv'd of it. As all my attention was fix'd on her only, and on the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction I ſhould enjoy in ſpeaking to her, and hearing her dear voice, I loſt ſight, as it were, of our puniſhment, and fed myſelf with a uſeleſs and unhappy tenderneſs.

At laſt night being come, I imagin'd that our execution would be ſuſpended till the morrow, which I aſcrib'd to the tumult we had occaſion'd the night before. I was reflecting on this, when I heard the door open on a ſudden; upon which

which four men came in, and advanc'd towards me without ſpeaking a word. They took off my chains, but had brought a rope, with which they tied my hands. I aſk'd them ſeveral queſtions, but could not obtain any anſwer. Tell me at leaſt, ſaid I to them, whether you are going to carry me to death? Shall I ſee my wife? Shall I not be allowed to bid her a laſt farewel? They ſeem'd to give me ſome ſigns that they were oblig'd by oath not once to open their lips, and diſcover'd ſome uneaſineſs upon that account; but one of them ſpoke: Let it be ſome conſolation to you, ſays he, that you will not die alone. Well, ſaid I, I forgive you my death, provided I may be allowed to breathe my laſt with my *Angelica*. They took me out of the ſtore-houſe, and carried me towards the ſea. I am then, ſaid I, going to death; my life and misfortunes will end together, heaven be prais'd for it: But where ſhall I meet my wife? They would not make any anſwer. I was ſurprized that neither compaſſion nor curioſity had brought ſome perſon to be a ſpectator on this ſad occaſion. But now, after we had walk'd about a mile, methought I heard the noiſe of ſome perſons, ſome going before, and others behind

hind us. I did not doubt but *Angelica* was among them, when my heart was ſeiz'd with ſuch emotions that I could ſcarce go a ſtep farther. Dear, unhappy wife, ſaid I, in the moſt mournful tone that ever ſure was heard, is our fond, our endearing promiſes come then to this? 'Tis then in periſhing together that we ſhall fulfil the oath we reciprocally made, never to be ſeparated. Oh! ſaid I to the men who guarded me, would pity at leaſt but ſuffer you to unlooſe my hands! If you would but give me leave to claſp my deareſt wife with one ſoul-raviſhing embrace! What are you afraid of? Dare you not be a little more humane than thoſe who gave you thoſe cruel orders? Cannot you put off your cruelty for a moment? They made me no manner of anſwer. We were come to the entrance of the winding way which went through the rock: We paſt it in the dark, but as we were coming out towards the ſea I perceiv'd a light, and ten or twelve men ſtanding on the ſhore, one of whom I diſcover'd to be *Gelin*.

His hands were alſo tied: 'Twas he I had heard walk before us, with the guards, and *Johnſon*, who was behind, came up a moment after. I thought they were

were doom'd to deſtruction no leſs than my ſelf. By a flood of tears which guſh'd ſuddenly from my eyes, and the unforeſeen horror with which I was ſeiz'd, I found that I had not yet been ſo unhappy as I was in that inſtant. I advanc'd forward in a tranſport towards my dear friends, whom I was not yet allowed to embrace. The paſſionate emotions by which I firſt expreſs'd my grief, perſuaded them that 'twas not the fear of dying that thus put me by myſelf: friendſhip now acted as ſtrongly on my heart as love had done before. I ſcarce could find words to expreſs the ſenſations I then felt. *Gelin* ſpoke before me: He ſpoke with a reſolute tone of voice, but his eyes ſeem'd to have loſt their uſual ſprightlineſs and fire. This, ſays he, is a very tragical ſcene, but we muſt go through it like men of honour. We were ſentenc'd to die as yeſterday, ſo that there will be only the hour and the manner of our death which will be chang'd. I was endeavouring to anſwer him, but I certainly ſhould not have ſpoke with ſo much reſolution as he did, when I was interrupted by one of the old men, who was giving out ſome orders from the boat, upon my coming, and ſeeing us ſtanding together, he ſpake to us as follows: HEAR-

HEARKEN, ſaid he, to what I am order'd to ſay to you: 'Tis manifeſt that you deſerve to die; *Bridge* was juſtly ſentenced to death, for committing a crime which was never pardon'd in this colony; and *Gelin* and *Johnſon* incurr'd ſo much guilt yeſterday, that the action alone proclaims it. We liv'd in a peaceable and happy manner before you came among us: You have diſturb'd our tranquillity by ſeducing our daughters, murdering our miniſter, and impoſing laws upon us by force and violence. In fine, you have brought all the depravity of *Europe* hither, which we hop'd would never invade theſe happy ſeats. Such are your crimes; they are evidently prov'd, and there is not one in the colony but voted for your being put to death; ſo that one would have thought it inevitable: However, the miniſter, in his expiring moments, deſir'd the veſtry to meet in his houſe; to them he confeſs'd with all humility that he had contributed to your errors by his ſeverity, for which he reproach'd himſelf; and his earneſt deſire to make his peace with heaven made him intercede ſo ſtrongly for your pardon, that we could not refuſe indulging his requeſt, that venerable man having been

been as a father to the colony for more than twenty years. He is dead, and your lives are ſpar'd. However, now you are pardon'd, we have not thought proper to keep you any longer among us. Reſentments, tho' ſtifled for ſome time, are yet apt to break out afterwards: Notwithſtanding the guilt you have incurr'd, and our lenity, we hardly think you will act juſtly with regard to yourſelves; and what may we not fear from three ſuch bold, ſuch enterprizing young men as you? Beſides, there are ſo many difficulties in your marriages that they never will be got over. You are reſolved not to ſubmit to the ſentence of the veſtry, and they are determin'd not to revoke it; ſo that the beſt you can do for both, will be to baniſh yourſelves for ever from this iſland, and to return to your native countries. Such is the ſentence of the conſiſtory, which I am order'd to declare to you. They order'd, that you ſhould be carried privately to the ſea-ſide, to prevent your being made a ſpectacle to the people, whom curioſity would have invited hither: And farther, that you may not have any juſt reaſon for complaint, or to accuſe us of ſeverity, they have order'd me to give you fifteen hundred pounds,

which

which you are to divide equally between you: You'll find it on board the little veſſel which will carry you to St. *Helena*. Depart, ſaid he, and you'll ſoon meet with a ſhip in that place in which you may ſail for *Europe*.

WHO could imagine, after the many afflicting circumſtances I have related, that there remain'd others ſtill more dreadful? But 'tis certain that when I heard that myſelf and *Angelica* were ſentenced to die, it yet did not make ſo deep an impreſſion on my mind, as my being order'd to leave the iſland. My companions were as much griev'd as my ſelf. Our pardon was not look'd upon by us as a favour, but accounted more dreadful than death it ſelf; which would have put an end to all our torments, but the life we were condemn'd to lead, far remov'd from our wives, wou'd be the moſt cruel puniſhment. No, ſays I, they ſhall not force me either to go away or accept of life. I will die, in caſe I have merited death; that only ſhall tear me from an iſland where all my happineſs is fix'd. Have ſome pity, ſays I to the old man who was going away, and leaving us with thoſe who had guarded us; have ſome compaſſion. Behold three unfortunate wretches,

wretches, who wiſh to die. Heavens! are three criminals refuſed to be put to death, who beg it as a favour? Stop; hearken to us; don't drive us to the utmoſt deſpair! He turn'd his head, but 'twas only to tell us that he ſympathized with us in our ſorrow, and the neceſſity he was under of obeying the orders of the veſtry. We then all fell on our knees, and our intreaties were ſo moving, that had he heard them, he muſt have been melted into compaſſion; but as he ſtruck into the opening of the rock, we loſt all further hopes. *Gelin* and *Johnſon*, who were no leſs afflicted than my ſelf, aſk'd me what we ſhould do. You are eloquent, ſays I to *Gelin*, endeavour therefore to ſoften thoſe who guard us. Accordingly, he employ'd all the rhetoric that art and nature, heightned by grief, cou'd ſuggeſt. But the inhabitants had appointed a ſett of wretches to guard us, whom they knew to be inflexible and barbarous.

AND now they urged us to go on board the veſſel; and indeed, had we refuſed it any longer they ſeemed inclined to force us to it. Our hands were ſtill bound faſt, ſo that we could not make the leaſt reſiſtance. I whiſper'd in *Gelin*'s ear, The evil is now paſt all cure; let us not render our

our ſelves obnoxious to theſe fellows, ſince we are wholly in their power. But in caſe we are carried to St. *Helena*, we may then return back in a formidable manner. Our fifteen hundred pounds will procure us aſſiſtance ſufficient. Tho' the inhabitants have told us that it would be impoſſible to come at their iſland, we yet will find it out, tho' it were to ſink under water. I ſpoke the ſame words to *Johnſon*, and both of them approv'd the hint, and thereupon we went on board. Our veſſel was not a very ſmall one. Six of the men who guarded us, and two rowers went into the ſhip. The night was ſo dark, that had they not been thoroughly acquainted with the coaſt, they would never have dar'd to run in the midſt of ſo many rocks. We went on our courſe very ſucceſsfully for ſome hours. Tho' thoſe who guarded us were not now under the ſame obligation of being ſilent, they yet refuſed to anſwer the queſtions we put to 'em. Mine turn'd wholly upon *Angelica*; but the ſtrong emotions I felt had prevented me, after the old man had ſpoke to us, from enquiring what fate my wife was doom'd to. Tho' I might naturally ſuppoſe that ſhe was not excepted out of the pardon, yet a bare probability was

not

not ſufficient to ſooth my uneaſineſs, and it increaſed very much, when I found my keepers ſtill ſilent on that article. Theſe obdurate wretches were deaf to my intreaties to the laſt. Alas! 'tis that fatal uncertainty, which is not yet clear'd up, that is ſtill my greateſt torment.

WE were now come to St. *Helena*, and 'twas ſtill dark. Our keepers ſet us on ſhore in a ſort of haſte, and taking the bag of gold out of the veſſel, they divided it into three parts as near as they could by weight. As you are ſuch intimate friends, ſay they, you'll divide the money more exactly hereafter, and the only reaſon of our doing it, is in order that it may be more portable. They then gave each of us our ſhare, and leaving us on the ſhore with our hands bound, they return'd immediately on board. But *Gelin* called after them, What! won't you looſe our hands, but make us paſs for a ſett of wretches who have been guilty of ſome enormous crime? They told us they were obliged to leave us ſo, the veſtry having given orders for that purpoſe; and they did not conceal the reaſon of it, which was, the apprehenſions they were under leſt we ſhould attempt to detain them, or oblige them to carry us back

to

to the iſland. 'Twas to no purpoſe that we promiſed not to abuſe our liberty, in caſe they would indulge it us. As they were going off from the ſhore I ſpoke to them as follows; You have, ſays I, been deaf to all our queſtions, and inſenſible to our intreaties; and we have not yet been able to melt you to compaſſion; but in caſe you have not quite put off all humanity, grant us (oh! we beg it of you) before you row away, the only favour we have to aſk, thus may heaven indulge all your deſires, when you are got to your iſland; alas! that happy iſland! when you are return'd into it, go to our dear wives, and tell them we deſir'd you to do it. Inform them then, tho' not of the exceſs of our deſpair, ſince that you cou'd never deſcribe; but that we are deeply griev'd for their ſakes. Give them a faithful account of what you ſaw us do, and all you heard. Tell the ſoul-inchanting *Angelica*, that the moſt barbarous ſentence, the moſt cruel ſeparation, cannot hinder me from being hers, and that ſhe is ſtill my wife; that ſhe is bound to be conſtant and faithful to me, and may depend upon my being ſo to her; that I may again be betray'd by perfidious wretches; be cruelly treated by the inhuman;

human; be unſucceſsful in my *deſigns*, periſh in my *enterprizes*; but that neither fortune or the malice of mankind, ſhall ever be able to drive her from my heart. Tell her unhappy mother, that I reproach my ſelf for all the ſorrows ſhe feels, tho' I am, alas! the innocent cauſe of it; that they touch me more than they do her; and that I am ſufficiently puniſh'd for 'em by the deep deſpair into which I am plunged. Tell them both---- Alas! tell them---- But the hard-hearted wretches were got at ſuch a diſtance that it was impoſſible for them to hear me. Poſſibly they might not attend to my intreaties when they were nearer; and I dare not flatter my ſelf ſo far as to think that the unhappy *Angelica* had the conſolation of hearing that I invok'd her name to the laſt. I had a particular view in employing the words *deſigns* and *enterprizes*, the meaning of which ſhe and her mother cou'd not fail of underſtanding, were they but told them. I don't doubt but they are daily complaining of fate, for ſuſpending ſo long the execution of them.

I LEAVE you to gueſs at our dreadful anxiety, after the veſſel was ſail'd away. Day did not yet begin to break, and the barbarians would not leave us a light.

'Twas ſo dark that we cou'd hardly ſee the ſand, tho' it was white. We judg'd, by the noiſe of the waves increaſing every moment, that the tide was coming in; and therefore were obliged to walk for ſome time in the dark, the ſea now beginning to wet our feet. Being got at a conſiderable diſtance, we ſat down, and reſolv'd to continue there till day-light. We endeavour'd to force off the cords from our hands, but to no purpoſe, ſo that we were obliged to continue bound, till ſome charitable hand ſhould looſe them. I ſhall not tire you with the relation of our complaints and groans. At laſt, day began to appear, when we diſcover'd the town about forty yards from us. We were very much aſham'd to go to it in the condition we were in, knowing that it might expoſe us to ſhame and contempt. We were firſt diſcover'd by ſome ſailors who were on the coaſt; and being ſtruck with the oddneſs of the ſight, they gaz'd upon us in aſtoniſhment for ſome time, not daring to approach us. I muſt obſerve, that as the coaſt of St. *Helena* is inhabited only by ſome *Portugueſe*, and a few *Engliſh* and *French*, all the inhabitants are acquainted with one another; ſo that the ſight of

three unknown perſons with their hands bound, cou'd not but ſurprize them. We begg'd them to looſe them. After having conſulted together a little, they anſwer'd in broken *Engliſh*, that thoſe who had tied them had undoubtedly a reaſon for ſo doing, and therefore they had no buſineſs with it, but that they would carry us to the governor, who might act as he pleaſed. 'Twas to no purpoſe that we continued our entreaties, they being ſtill deaf, and forced us to follow them. Being obliged to go thro' the ſettlement, we were in a moment ſurrounded with a great number of people, which fill'd us with the utmoſt confuſion. But now meeting the governor in the ſtreet, the firſt requeſt we made him was, that he wou'd pleaſe to order the populace to retire, and go with us into ſome houſe, in order to hear what we had to ſay; which he conſented to. The governor, whoſe name was Don *Pedro Columella*, tho' a *Portugueſe*, nevertheleſs ſpoke both *Engliſh* and *French* with tolerable propriety. We told him our whole ſtory, which he liſtned to with admiration; and finding undoubtedly that our grief was natural and unaffected, he was moved to compaſſion, and

gave us the ſtrongeſt aſſurance of his protection.

We did not immediately diſcloſe our grand deſign to him, but left him for a conſiderable time in the opinion, that we waited only for ſome ſhip in which we might ſail for *Europe*. *Gelin*, who had a moſt winning carriage, endeavour'd in the mean time to inſinuate himſelf into his favour, in order that he might afterwards aſſiſt us in our enterprize. At laſt Don *Pedro* was ſo kind to us, that we were not afraid of begging him to lend us ſuch a ſuccour, as might enable us to recover our wives. We had often diſcourſed with him about the unknown iſland, which we had left with ſo much regret, and were ſtill ſo fond of. He always took great pleaſure in hearing us relate the particulars of our adventures, and the riſe and preſent ſtate of that colony; but then he, at firſt, never ſhew'd the leaſt inclination to ſend any perſons to diſcover it. I find, ſays he, thoſe people have a mind to live conceal'd, and I don't deſire to hinder their being ſo. They come to our iſland, but not ſo often as they did a few years ago, to purchaſe certain things they want. Iron and ſeveral ſorts of tools are of great ſervice to them,

and they leave it to our choice either to pay our ſelves in money, cattle, or the produce of their lands. I know there are ſeveral ſmall iſlands in this ſea, and they undoubtedly inhabit one of them. Don *Pedro* ſaid farther, that his predeceſſor had made ſeveral fruitleſs attempts to find out their abode; that he had cauſed them to be followed; and that having once taken ſome of them priſoners, he had endeavour'd both by threats and promiſes to make them diſcover their iſland, but finding it impoſſible to get any thing out of them, he reſolv'd to let them alone; that he himſelf had done the ſame for ten years, during which he had govern'd St. *Helena*; that about a year before one of their wives had made a voyage into *Europe*, who had embark'd at St. *Helena*, and returned ſome months after; but that he had not had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing or ſpeaking to her, becauſe the men who waited for her in this port ſet ſail with her the inſtant ſhe arriv'd.

THO' the governor did not acquaint us with any thing but what we knew before, his diſcourſe nevertheleſs flatter'd our hopes. We no ſooner found that he was willing to forward our deſigns,

but we intreated him to lend us one of his largeſt veſſels, a few ſoldiers, and ſome experienced ſailors, which he conſented to, and accordingly we ſet ſail. We ſpent upwards of ſix Weeks in rambling over the weſtern part of the *Ethiopian* ocean, expoſed every inſtant to the being loſt, as we were in ſo ſmall a veſſel, which was ſcarce able to reſiſt the winds and waves. We put into a great number of known and inhabited iſlands, ſuch as *Martin Vaz*, *St. Maria d' Agoſta*, *Los Picos*, and we diſcover'd ſeveral that were before unknown. Tho' the danger increas'd daily by the crazineſs of our veſſel, this yet would not have damp'd our reſolution had my two companions and I only been on board; but our ſoldiers and ſailors, who knew the danger we ran, and were in continual dread, declared they would return immediately to *St. Helena*: They repreſented to us that 'twas not probable the iſland we ſought for lay at ſo great a diſtance from it; that it muſt neceſſarily be near *St. Helena*, ſince we ourſelves had aſſur'd them we had not been above three hours in coming from thence; that it was on this ſuppoſition only that the governor had lent us a veſſel, and order'd them to ac-

accompany us. However, as we had rewarded them ſo liberally, they promiſed to follow us all the world over, in caſe we could procure a tight veſſel. Thus did we return from our firſt expedition, with the unhappineſs of ſeeing our hopes farther removed than ever.

DON *Pedro* was very much troubled at the ill ſucceſs of our voyage; for as we had been out ſo long, he flatter'd himſelf that we had met with ſucceſs, and was diſpoſed to grant us all the aſſiſtance we might want farther; but there was not ſo much as one veſſel in the harbour, at leaſt for our purpoſe. The iſland of *St. Helena* carries on very little trade, but 'tis well ſituated for ſuch ſhips as return from the *Eaſt-Indies* by *Africa*, and for ſuch as return to *Europe* from the moſt ſouthern parts of *America*, it lying in their way, and furniſhing them with all ſorts of refreſhments; but if we except the ſhips which ſometimes put into the harbour, there are but a few indifferent veſſels in it. The governor gave us a piece of advice, which, had we not been ſo impatient, we ſhould have follow'd; and that was, to ſtay in *St. Helena* till neceſſity ſhould bring ſome of the inhabitants of the colony thither. I'll give,

ſays he, ſtrict orders that no one ſhall mention your being among us. As they probably won't ſuſpect any thing, I'll get a wonderful * *Phoſphorus*, which I myſelf know how to make, fix'd privately to their veſſel, when you ſhall lie ready in my ſhip, and the inſtant they ſet out, you may follow them at ſome diſtance, tho' it be ever ſo dark. We fed upon theſe childiſh and trifling hopes for near ſix months; but they were merely ideal, and we had the mortification not to ſee one of the inhabitants of the colony arrive in all that time, as tho' they ſuſpected that we were ſtill in *St. Helena*, and therefore were reſolv'd not to come thither.

We were continually on the ſhore, caſting our impatient eyes over the whole ocean; and tho' the veſſel of the colony had been at never ſo great a diſtance from us, we ſhould ſoon have diſcover'd it, could our ſight have reach'd as far as our thoughts. One day, as we were thus employ'd, we ſpy'd a ſhip that was making heavily towards the ſhore. We plainly ſaw that it had been buffeted by

* Is a ſubſtance which burns, or ſhines in the dark, without being lighted by a ſenſible fire.

a ſtorm,

a ſtorm, and was in danger of ſinking. Her captain immediately order'd ſome of his men to go into the long-boat, whom he ſent with a meſſage to the governor, deſiring their aſſiſtance. His veſſel leak'd in every part, ſo that he was afraid he ſhould not be able to reach the ſhore. All the veſſels which lay in the harbour inſtantly made up to the ſhip in diſtreſs, in order to take in the crew and part of her lading. The veſſel being thus lightned, arrived ſafe in the port: 'Twas a *Dutch* ſhip. However, as ſhe was not yet in a condition to ſail ſo far as *Holland*, eſpecially as her cargo was worth fifty thouſand pounds ſterling, the captain, not willing to run any hazard, reſolved to have another built at *St. Helena*. The iſland abounds with excellent wood for that purpoſe, and they found carpenters ſufficient. We no ſooner heard of his deſign, but I thank'd heaven for inſpiring him with it; for nothing could be more favourable to the ſucceſs of ours. I reſolved to propoſe to him the refitting of his veſſel, and to offer to pay part of the expence. Though ſhe was very crazy, I yet thought ſhe might be made to ſerve well enough for our purpoſe, eſpecially as we were not to take any la-

ding on board. This I propos'd to my companions, who approv'd of the hint; upon which I ſoon made an agreement with the captain, who, at the governor's deſire, came to very reaſonable terms, when I immediately ſet the carpenters at work. They were almoſt as long a refitting her as the other carpenters were in building a new one.

And now we had a ſhip of our own, 'twould be impoſſible for me to deſcribe the joy we felt when we put out to ſea. This precious veſſel was not only part of our poſſeſſions, but our deareſt hopes were grounded on it. The governor gave us fifteen ſoldiers well arm'd, with eight mariners; when taking in a large quantity of proviſions, we were perſuaded, that in caſe the colony was not a viſionary one, and our whole adventure an illuſion of fancy, we ſhould at laſt diſcover what we ſo eagerly ſought after; but Providence has not yet permitted us to find it out. We have now rambled up and down the ſeas for near three months, and have gone an hundred times round the iſland of *St. Helena* at about five or ſix leagues diſtance, in ſearch of the colony, but in vain. Heaven! is it thou who blindeſt us, upon

ſome

ſome account which to us is incomprehenſible, or doſt thou leave our wretched deſtiny in the hands of fortune, which torments us in this ſevere manner? We have now been toſs'd about theſe three months by ſome invidious power, which always removes us from the place we ſearch after; to-day we are near *St. Helena*, to-morrow we are drove fifty leagues from it, as the winds, the waves, and fortune pleaſe to drive us. We were this night thrown into your courſe by a violent ſtorm, and were for eight or nine hours in danger of ſinking every moment: I nevertheleſs look'd upon this accident as the greateſt bleſſing that heaven ever indulg'd me, ſince otherwiſe I had not met with a dear brother, and reſcued him out of the hands of his enemies.

My brother plung'd me into freſh perplexity when he ended his relation; and his heart, now as much ſoften'd by my preſence, as the remembrance of his misfortunes, eas'd its deep pangs by ſhedding a flood of tears, in which I ſympathized with him. He afterwards told me, that his meeting with captain *Wills* had made him very uneaſy. He firſt, ſays he, aſk'd me whether I was returning for *England:*

England: I anſwer'd him that I was, in caſe the winds and waves would give me leave; upon which, without aſking any more queſtions, he deſir'd me to take one of the Protector's enemies which he had in his ſhip, on board mine; and he afterwards let me into ſome of the moſt material ſecrets you had entruſted him with. I was ſtruck with horror when I conſider'd his perfidy, but thought it would be proper to employ diſſimulation, the better to carry on the deſign I had of ſuccouring you. 'Twas this prompted me to uſe you with ſeverity till he ſailed away: My heart bled when I thought of the terrors you were under; and tho' that treacherous wretch had given me but an imperfect account of your ſtory, yet inſtinct, or ſomething like it, told me that you were my brother. Alas! I perceive but too plainly that you are as unfortunate as myſelf; we both had the ſame father, and are puniſh'd for his crimes. But, ſays he, I have dwelt too long on this ſtory, and I am impatient to carry you to *Gelin* and *Johnſon*, who undoubtedly are ſurpriz'd at my ſtaying ſo long with you. I muſt entreat you to love thoſe dear, thoſe faithful friends for my ſake; you'll ſoon find

find that they deſerve to be eſteem'd for their own. And ſaying this, he brought us together.

HAD I myſelf told this ſtory merely from the relation my brother made, it would not have been ſo long; but I am to inform the reader that it was drawn up by my brother at my requeſt, in almoſt the very words in which it is now given.

The End of the Second Volume.

ERRATA.

N. B. For *Reding*, read always *Riding*.

PAGE 3. Line 5. for *adventures*, read *my adventures*; p. 4. l. ult. f. *thoughts*, r. *thought*; p. 21. l. 21. f. *that*, r. *my*; p. 22. l. 9. f. *clave*, r. *cleav'd*; p. 25. l. 1. f. *This*, r. *His*; p. 35. l. 12. f. *were*, r. *are*; p. 46. l. 19. dele *the*; p. 48. l. 1. f. *the ſigns*, r. *his ſighs*; p. 72. l. 14. f. *freighted*, r. *freighted it*; p. 113. l. 23. f. *preſſing*, r. *ſuppoſing*; p. 118. l. 25. after *told her*, add *in order*; p. 121. l. 12. before *that*, add *is*; p. 137. l. 15. for *men might*, r. *you*; p. 169. l. 27. dele *not*; p. 195. l. 8. dele *that*; p. 197. l. 9. for *view*, r. *voice*.

A CATALOGUE of BOOKS

Sold by N. PREVOST, *over-againſt* Southampton-ſtreet *in the* Strand.

In FOLIO.

LES Oeuvres de M. de Fontenelle, nouvelle Edition augmentée & enrichie de figures gravées, par Bernard Picart. 3 Vol.

Les Monuments de la Monarchie Francoiſe, par le P. Montfaucon. 2 Vol. Fol. a Paris, 1730.

N. B. Ce Livre eſt une Suite des Antiquitéz expliquées en 15 Vol. du même Auteur.

Hiſtoire Eccleſiaſtique & Civile de Lorraine avec des figures & les piéces Juſtificatives par D. Auguſtin Calmet. 3 Vol. Fol. a Nancy, 1728.

Henr. Noriſii Opera omnia, nunc primum collecta atque ordinata. 3 Vol. Fol. Veronæ, 1729.

Burcardi Gotth. Struvii Corpus Hiſtoriæ Germanicæ a prima Gentis origine ad annum uſque 1730. 2 Vol. Jenæ 1730.

The Religious Ceremonies and Cuſtoms of the ſeveral Nations of the Known World. Repreſented in above an hundred Copper-Plates, deſigned by the Famous

mous Picart. Together with hiſtorical Explanations, and ſeveral curious Diſſertations. Written originally in French; and now publiſhed in Engliſh, with very conſiderable Amendments and Additions. 3 Vol. fol. London, 1731.

Orbis Sacer & Profanus illuſtratus, autore Franc. Orlandio. Fol. Florentiæ. Veronæ, 1728.

Muratori Rerum Italicarum Scriptores. 18 Vol. Fol.

Storie di Giovanni, Matteo, e Filippo Villani. 2 Vol. Milano 1729.

Tutte le Opere di Giovan-Giorgio Triſſino, 2 Vol. Verona 1729.

Opere del Cardinale Pietro Bembo ora por la prima volta tutte in un Corpo unite, 2 Vol. Venezia 1729.

S. Athanaſii Opera omnia ex Edit. Benedict. 3 Vol. Fol. Paris.

S. Hieronymi Opera omnia ex Edit. Benedict. 5 Vol. à Paris.

In QUARTO.

D. M. Auſonii Burdigalenſis Opera. Interpretatione & Notis illuſtravit Julianus Floridus, in uſum ſereniſſ. Delphini, cum Emendat. & Animadverſ. Joan. Bapt. Souchay, 4° Paris 1730.

Les

Les Avantures de Telemaque, par M. de Fenelon, Archevêque de Cambray. Nouvelle Edition, ornée de figures en tailles douces, gravées par Coypel & autres bons maitres, à Paris 1730.

Les Oeuvres de M. de Fontenelle. Nouvelle Edition, augmentée & enrichie de figures gravées par Bernard Picart, 3 Vol. 4°. à la Haye, 1729 & 30.

Les Oeuvres de Clement Marot, Valet de Chambre de François I. Roy de France, avec les ouvrages de Jean Marot ſon Pere, ceux de Michel Marot ſon fils, & les pieces du different de Clement avec François Sagon ; accompagnées d'une Preface Hiſtoriques, & d'Obſervations critiques, 4 Vol.

Titus Livius ad uſum Delphini, 6 Vol. 4°.

Voyage d'Abiſſinie, par le P. Lobo.

Hiſtoire de l'Academie Françoiſe, par Meſſ. Peliſſon & d'Olivet.

Methode pour étudier l'Hiſtoire, par l'Abbé l'Anglet du Freſnoy, 4 Vol.

Le Theatre des Grecs, par le P. Brumoy, 3 Vol. à Paris 1730.

Hiſtoire Romaine, par Catrou & Rouillé, 16 Vol.

——— de Polybe, avec les Commentaires du Chevalier Folard, 6 Vol. avec figures.

Dictionnaire de la Bible, par le P. Calmet, ou le Supplement a eſté rangé en ſa place, 4 Vol.

Hiſtoire Eccleſiaſtique pour ſervir de continuation à celle de M. Fleury depuis l'an 1528 juſqu'en 1545. Tome 27 & 28. à Paris 1730.

Hiſtoire de la Guerre des Huſſites & du Concile de Baſle, par M. l'Enfant, 2 Vol. 4°. Amſterdam 1731.

Teſoro Britannico, overo il Muſeo Nummario, ove ſi contengono le Medaglie Greche e Latine in ogni Metallo e Forma, non prima publicate, da Nic. Franc. Haym. 2 Vol. Londra 1719.

In OCTAVO & DUODECIMO.

Journées Amuſantes, par Madame Gomez, 6 Vol. 12°.

——Le même, Tome 5 & 6, ſeparés.

Le Bellier, conte, par le Comte Hamilton, 12°.

Les quatre facardins, conte, par le même, 12°.

La fleur d'Epine, conte, par le même, 12°.

Oeuvres meſlées en Proſes & en Vers, par le même.

Memoires du Comte de Grammont, nouvelle Edit. augmentée par le même, 12°.

Eſprit

BOOKS Sold by N. PREVOST.

Eſprit des Converſations agreables, ou nouveau Melange de penſées choiſies. 3 Vol. à Paris, 1730.

Anecdotes Grecques, ou Avantures ſecretes d'Aridée, traduit d'un Manuſcrit Grec, 12°. à Paris 1730.

Memoires de Mademoiſelle de la Charce, contenant ce qui s'eſt paſſé ſous le Regne de Louis XIV. à Paris 1731.

Amoſis Prince Egyptien, Hiſtoire merveilleuſe, 12°.

Relation Hiſtorique & Galante de l'Invaſion de l'Eſpagne par les Maures, 2 Vol. 12°.

Ibrahim, ou l'illuſtre Baſſa, 4 Vol. 12°.

Les Avantures d'Ariſtée & de Telaſie, Hiſtoire galante & heroique, 2 Vol. à Paris 1731.

Les Oeuvres de M. Dancourt, contenant ſes piéces de Theatre, 9 Vol. 12°. à Paris 1730.

Les Parodies du nouveau Theatre Italien, 3 Vol. 12°. à Paris 1731.

Maniere d'Etudier les belles Lettres, par rapport à l'Eſprit & au cœur, par M. Rollin, 4 Vol. 12°.

Hiſtoire ancienne, par le même, 2 Vol. 12°.

Nouvelle Traduction des Lettres de Ciceron à Brutus, 2 Vol. 12°. à Paris 1731.